Constituents Without Citizenship?
Immigrant Political Incorporation in New Destinations

by

Erica Rose Dobbs

M.P.P. Kennedy School of Government
Harvard University, 2004

B.A. History
Howard University, 2000

SUBMITTED TO THE DEPARTMENT OF POLITICAL SCIENCE IN PARTIAL
FULFILLMENT OF THE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE DEGREE OF

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY IN POLITICAL SCIENCE
AT THE
MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY

SEPTEMBER 2013

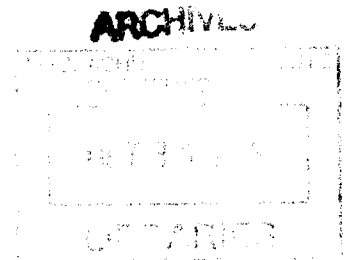@2013 Erica Dobbs. All rights reserved.

Signature of Author:_____
Department of Political Science
September 9, 2013

Certified by:_____
Michael Piore
David W. Skinner Professor of Political Economy and Political Science, Emeritus
Thesis Supervisor

Accepted by:_____
Roger Petersen
Professor of Political Science
Chair, Graduate Program Committee

Constituents Without Citizenship?
Immigrant Political Incorporation in New Destinations

By

Erica Rose Dobbs

ABSTRACT

This dissertation explores the role of native activists in the incorporation of new immigrants. Motivated by concerns that this process would be limited in countries with no tradition of immigration, it focuses on Spain, Ireland, and Northern Ireland. Despite similar patterns of growth and in-migration, there are significant differences in the trajectories of political incorporation. Given Spain's persistently high unemployment rate, and Northern Ireland's dark history of social conflict, we would expect to see the most political outreach to immigrants in Ireland, yet we see quite the opposite. What explains this variation?

Drawing from archival research and interviews, I find that differences in how native activists respond to immigrants in the present are due to how they settled past conflicts. In places where past native minority demands for civic inclusion were accommodated, institutions were changed to be more open to minority participation. Later, with new immigration, not only may newcomers have access to civic life through institutions designed for native minorities, native groups may repurpose the same historical narratives used to address their marginalization in the past, to prevent the marginalization of new immigrants in the present. While places that do not have access to this legacy of conflict may attempt to establish new, migrant serving institutions, because these new structures are often targeted rather than universalistic, they are vulnerable to retrenchment.

Therefore, while Ireland may have had immigrant-friendly institutions early on, because these did not have vested native constituencies, their remit was limited and unstable. Spain and Northern Ireland's recent conflicts meant that their minority-friendly institutions could not be cut back – and were actually extended – when confronted with new immigration because they also benefited natives with an interest in maintaining them.

These findings raise serious questions about approaches to incorporation that focus solely on programs targeting immigrants. They also suggest that societies with a

legacy of conflict may be better equipped to handle incorporation than their more tranquil counterparts: if the grievances of previously marginalized native minorities were addressed through the establishment of more inclusive civic institutions, there can be unintended positive spillover benefits for immigrants down the line.

Thesis Supervisor: Michael Piore
Title: David W. Skinner Professor of Political Economy and Political Science, Emeritus

Acknowledgements

Table of Contents

Tables

Graphs & Illustrations

Abbreviations

CCOO	Confederación Sindical de Comisiones Obreras
CiU	Convergència i Unió
CNT	Confederación Nacional de Trabajo
CSO	Central Statistics Office
DUP	Democratic Unionist Party
ICTU	Irish Congress of Trade Unions
INE	Instituto Nacional de Estadistica
IRA	Irish Republican Army
IU	Izquierda Unida
MRCI	Migrant Rights Centre Ireland
NICEM	Northern Ireland Council for Ethnic Minorities
NISRA	Northern Ireland Statistics and Research Agency
PCE	Partido Comunista de España
PIRA	Provisional Irish Republican Army
PNV	Partido Nacionalista Vasco
PP	Partido Popular
PSNI	Police Service of Northern Ireland
PSOE	Partido Socialista Obrero Español
PxC	Plataforma per Catalunya
SDLP	Social Democratic and Labour Party
SIPTU	Services Industrial Professional and Technical Union
UDA	Ulster Defense Association
UGT	Sindicato Unión General de Trabajadores
UUP	Ulster Unionist Party
UVF	Ulster Volunteer Force

Chapter 1 - Introduction

In November 2011, Darren Scully, a city councilor and the serving mayor of Naas, a bedroom community outside of Dublin, Ireland, announced that his office would no longer deal with inquiries from African constituents. In a radio interview, Mayor Scully noted that having been "met with aggressiveness and bad manners", he decided that he was "just not going to take on representation from black Africans" and would therefore redirect queries from African constituents to one of the other councilors in the district.[1] This announcement, unsurprisingly, caused a public firestorm, with migrant rights groups calling for his resignation, and one Labour Party councilor even going so far as to file a police complaint under the Incitement to Hatred Act.[2] Scully's party, Fine Gael, quickly distanced themselves from his statements, and the councilor resigned shortly thereafter.

While Scully's actions may seem surprising in isolation, they were indicative of the growing unease that the Irish political class – and the public – felt when it came to immigration. From the mid 19th century, when hundreds of thousands of Irish left the island fleeing starvation, disease, and political unrest, until deep in the 1980s when the country was forced to undergo a series of painful economic reforms in the midst of yet another economic crisis, Ireland was a country of emigration. However, the tide began to turn in the 1990s when the Celtic Tiger

---

[1] "Naas mayor refuses to represent black Africans," *Irish Examiner*, November 22, 2011, http://www.irishexaminer.com/breakingnews/ireland/naas-mayor-refuses-to-represent-black-africans-529297.html.

[2] Telford, L, "Fine Gael's Daren Scully quits as mayor of Naas over his comments about 'black Africans', *Independent* (Ireland, November 22, 2011, http://www.independent.ie/irish-news/fine-gaels-darren-scully-quits-as-mayor-of-naas-over-his-comments-about-black-africans-26794755.html.

economy not only attracted attention from foreign investors, but foreign workers as well. As unemployment fell, the migrant population grew, and by 2006, just before the collapse of the housing bubble and the global economic crisis that would devastate the Irish economy, close to 15% of the population was foreign-born, putting Ireland ahead of the United States (12%) and the United Kingdom (8%), two countries that were long a refuge for Irish migrant workers.

The Scully affair in Ireland was notable not only because it seemed like such an extreme response to rapid demographic change, but also because it stood in stark contrast to events in another rapidly changing 'new destination' European country, Spain. A few months prior to the Scully scandal, Mariano Rajoy, the leader of the center-right *Partido Popular* (Popular Party, heretofore referred to as "Populares' or 'PP'), led a press event to personally introduce a slate of immigrant candidates to stand in the local elections.[3] That same day, the PP released a video on its website of migrant candidates that included Juan Antonio de la Morena, an immigrant from Equatorial Guinea who was the mayor of Villamantilla, a bedroom community outside of Madrid. The contrast between the situation in Villamantilla and Naas was startling: both are quiet suburbs outside of their respective capitals, and both have undergone rapid demographic change over the last decade due to migration, but in one, 'black African' immigrants were told by the native-born mayor to seek political counsel elsewhere, while in the other, a black African immigrant *was* the mayor.

---

[3] "El PP prepara un acto de Rajoy con candidatos de origen inmigrante" *press release*, Partido Popular, April 24, 2011. Available online at: http://www.pp.es/actualidad-noticia/pp-prepara-un-acto-rajoy-candidatos-origen-inmigrante_4646.html.

The differences observed when comparing Naas and Villamantilla extend beyond the politics of sleepy bedroom communities. Over the last two decades, patterns of migration to Western Europe have shifted significantly. For most of the post-war era, immigrants primarily settled in the industrial states of Northern Europe. Today Greece, Ireland, Spain, Italy and Portugal, countries that were long the reserve labor pool for their wealthier neighbors, are themselves grappling with immigration. Yet despite similarities in migration flows and socioeconomic conditions, we still see significant variation in how native political actors in these new destinations have responded to newcomers. In Spain, attempts to form far-right anti-immigration nationalist parties have failed, despite the highest unemployment rate in the Eurozone; in Greece, a country also struggling with crippling unemployment, a new anti-immigrant far-right party, Golden Dawn, won close to 7% of votes in the 2012 parliamentary elections. The Italian government appointed a Congolese- born doctor to serve as the country's first integration minister; in Ireland, the inaugural Minister for Integration was a politician who, prior to his appointment, referred to Turkish migrant workers fighting against wage discrimination as "kebobs".[4] Perhaps most surprisingly, nationalists in Northern Ireland and the Basque Country of Spain have emerged as vocal advocates for immigrant political and social rights – this despite long histories of ethno-nationalism, and a willing to take up arms against the state to defend their vision of the 'imagined community' (Anderson 1991). What explains this variation?

---

[4] 602, Dáil Éireann (2005) 1195-1197.

Question and Scope

This thesis seeks to explain why we see such variation in what I call *incorporative activity*, namely *actions on the part of native political actors to bring new immigrants into the polity.* I focus primarily on native political actors at the national level, with particular attention to the behavior of political parties. Parties are distinct from other political organizations in democracies because they are both gatekeepers and protagonists. Within legislatures, they negotiate and ratify the laws governing access to citizenship and electoral eligibility. They also engage more broadly with the citizenry at large by mobilizing voters for elections and putting forth the candidates that will sit in the legislature. In other words, they both create the context for, and are positioned to actively engage in incorporative activities targeting immigrants. This is not to say that other political organizations are unimportant; on the contrary, trade unions, non-governmental organizations (NGOs), churches, employers associations, and other assorted groups all may have an interest in migration-related policies. However, because I am explicitly interested in *political* activities and activities specifically meant to channel immigrants into political life, my analysis focuses on those organizations with a more explicitly political *raison d'être*; hence why I primarily – though not exclusively – focus on parties, and to a lesser extent unions, NGOs, and state officials.[5]

---

[5] Hochschild et. al. (2013) note that, "it can be hard to distinguish nonpolitical from political institutions, in part because engagement with nonpolitical institutions such as churches or mosques can have real consequences for politics" (pg. 15).

Because 'incorporative activity' is rather broad conceptually, I focus on three

key areas.[6] First are actions meant to open or ease the pathway to *citizenship*.

Although citizenship is not the prerequisite that it used to be for political

engagement – not only are there non-electoral channels of civic participation that do

not require citizenship, a rising number of democracies make allowances for non-

citizen voting – it is still a requirement in most countries to vote in both local and

national elections and to have full political and social rights.[7] Second are actions

meant to facilitate immigrant participation in *electoral politics*, including

recruitment of immigrant voters and candidates, and extension of non-citizen voting

rights. The move to recruit immigrants to participate in elections is a way for

native political organizations to demonstrate that they see immigrants as valued

members of the polity (Andersen 2010), and the recruitment of immigrant

candidates not only sends a signal about inclusion, but it is also a way to garner

additional immigrant interest in elections, as having a co-ethnic on the ballot may

increase turnout for that group (Whitby 2007; Barreto 2007). Third, I measure

actions meant to build the *capacity* of migrant organizations to make their own

demands on the state, whether through partnerships with native organizations, or

direct financial and/or strategic support. Research on variation in political

integration suggests that these capacity-building actions can increase political

---

[6] These measurements are derived from Kristi Andersen's (2010) analysis of ways in which
native political actors in the U.S. are 'taking on the task' of incorporation: "Encouraging
and facilitating *naturalization*, promoting *voter registration, educating* people about issues
and participatory channels, and providing them with *resources and motivations* to
participate" (2010; 71, italics added). I have consolidated the last two points into 'capacity-
building'.
[7] For a discussion of why states choose to enfranchise immigrants, see Earnest 2006.

incorporation in the long-term (Bloemraad 2005). Note, however, that for the purposes of this project, I am not focusing on the *outcomes* from these actions (increased immigrant electoral participation, rise in naturalization rates, etc.). Rather, I am interested in the *process*, namely whether or not native political actors even attempt to include new immigrants. These attempts matter: past work has shown that the process of outreach "[affects] understandings of citizenship, especially of immigrants' legitimate political standing as citizens and of their ability to participate in the political process" (Bloemraad 2006:4). Even though immigrants may not enter the political arena, they appreciate the invitation.[8]

I focus on incorporative activity in 'new destination' countries, places that were, until recently, more likely to be countries of emigration rather than immigration. To date, most of the existing explanations for variation in incorporative activity have been drawn from three sets of countries: 1) large "settler states" like the United States and Canada, places whose populations were largely built by immigration, 2) large, wealthy industrialized countries in Northern Europe that sought out guest workers in the post-war period, and 3) small wealthy European countries that welcomed asylum-seekers, first from the Balkans and then further afield, in the 1990s. But today, the patterns and context of migration are shifting wildly. In Europe, between 1992 when the Maastricht Treaty was signed, laying out the final-stage criteria for joining the euro, and 2008, when recession swept across the euro zone and beyond, the countries with the fastest growing

---

[8] Both the parameters and significance of incorporative activity are discussed in greater detail in Chapter 2.

foreign-born populations were not the long-standing migrant-absorbing states like Germany, France, and the US, but rather the smaller countries on the geographic and economic periphery of Western Europe [Figure 1.1].

Europe's new immigrant-receiving states are decidedly different from the region's 'old destination' states. First, new destinations lack the kinds of formal institutions and political organizations that facilitate incorporative activity in 'old destinations': multi-lingual services, legal clinics, and advocacy groups that were established to ease the entry of previous waves of immigrants into civic life can in turn play the same role for new immigrants (Waters and Jiménez 2005; Mollenkopf and Hochschild 2010). In addition, new destinations lack the kinds of historical narratives that facilitate incorporation by normalizing the idea that immigrants could and should be a part of civic life (Griffith 2008). Narratives are important, as they can offer guidance or lines of action in times of uncertainty (Zald 1996; Ganz 2012), but unlike their counterparts the United States, political actors in new destination countries like Portugal and Greece cannot refer to themselves as 'a nation of immigrants', speak to the success of 'the melting pot', or otherwise look to the narratives of successful past integration when debating citizenship policies in the present. Therefore, the social and political context of reception for immigrants in old destinations and new destinations varies considerably: new destinations have not been 'primed' by previous waves of immigration, and therefore do not have the pre-established allies and entry points into civic life available to new arrivals in old

destinations.[9] Finally, Europe's new destinations are socio-economically distinct from old destinations as well. Many new destinations are not far removed from poverty and emigration themselves, and industrial might - if it existed at all - has been limited to small pockets rather than the economy at large. Therefore, much of what we know about the process of incorporation in old destinations, a process that was, in many cases, inextricably tied to mass industrialization, will not hold in today's new destinations. That said, the lessons learned from Europe's new destinations may be far more relevant for other emerging immigrant-receiving countries at and beyond the southern and eastern boundaries of Europe than the lessons drawn from Northern Europe and North America.

Despite this pessimistic assessment, we do actually see examples of incorporative activity in new destinations: elected officials have voted to widen eligibility requirements for citizenship, parties have recruited both migrant voters and candidates, unions have partnered with migrant worker organizations, and even local government officials have been involved in efforts to increase the immigrant presence in political life. However, we also see quite the opposite, even in seemingly similar political and economic contexts: access to citizenship has been curtailed, parties, rather than mobilizing immigrants, mobilize the anti-immigration vote, and capacity-building partnerships between native and migrant

---

[9] This is not to say that the context of reception for new immigrants in old destinations is necessarily warm and fuzzy, or even welcoming: both Erie (1988) and Jones-Correa (1998) have noted cases where pre-existing political organizations that mobilized immigrants in the past may not be enthusiastic about mobilizing present-day immigrants, largely due to not wanting to upset the status quo balance of power.

organizations are limited and unstable, at best. What explains this variation across new destination societies?

Existing studies of political incorporation tend to focus on the role of institutions (Brubaker 1992; Bloemraad 2005) or the political interests of native actors (Dahl (1974) 2005; Erie 1988; Jones-Correa 1998) in order to explain variation in the incorporative activities of native political actors. However, I offer a theory of incorporative activity that focuses on the *interaction* of these two key factors to explain outcomes, highlighting how past cycles of conflict among natives can lead not only to institutional changes that facilitate incorporation, but can also affect the behavior and worldviews of the actors that made these demands – both with unforeseen, but critical consequences for the legal and political citizenship of future immigrants.

Argument in Brief

Why do some native political actors take on the task of incorporating new immigrants, while others ignore or actively move to exclude them from civic life? I argue that these differences in how native political actors in receiving countries respond to immigrants in the present are due to how they have settled internal social conflicts in the past. Specifically, I argue that the ability and willingness of native political actors in new destination countries to take action in order to bring new immigrants into civic life depends on how these societies have dealt with the political inclusion of their own native minorities.

I find that past social conflict over the political exclusion of minorities–

whether religious, ethnic, or cultural - can lead to the development of minority-

friendly political and social institutions, empower political actors with an interest in

minority rights, and establish social narratives oriented towards addressing issues

of marginalization and exclusion. When confronted with new immigration, these

previously marginalized groups may repurpose the institutions and narratives

developed to address their own past exclusion in order to facilitate the political

inclusion of new immigrants. Therefore, countries with a legacy of deep social

conflict may be better prepared to deal with new immigration than their more

stable counterparts.

Past social conflict matters for three key reasons. First, the articulation of

demands for greater political inclusion of minorities forces an alternative social

narrative into the public sphere. Should these demands be accommodated, this

'alternative' narrative becomes mainstream: its ideals are institutionalized into law,

and it gives political actors a way to frame issues of political exclusion in public

debate and discourse. Second, the experience of being marginalized may lead native

minority groups to make joint cause with new marginalized minority groups,

namely immigrants. It also gives these groups a strong incentive to maintain the

institutions designed to protect their rights – and that inadvertently benefit new

immigrants. Third, the inclusive civic institutions that result from minority

demands and cycles of conflict not only have a built-in constituency interested in

maintaining them, but they may see their constituencies expand over time, as other

native groups and the bureaucrats tasked with maintaining them also develop a vested interest in their maintenance. Taken together, past cycles of social conflict leaves some societies with open, minority-friendly civic institutions, native political actors interested in the political inclusion of minority groups and the maintenance of these inclusive institutions, and a shared historical narrative to guide public debates and policy around minority civic inclusion. In other words, in terms of institutions, allies, and narratives, the legacy of social conflict can leave new destinations looking a lot like old destinations.

These findings beg the question: do societies really need to go through historical cycles of conflict in order to successfully facilitate the incorporation of new immigrant populations? Can political actors interested in incorporation today simply create their own inclusive civic institutions? Unfortunately, my findings suggest that civic institutions that emerge in response to migration, and that specifically target immigrant populations may be vulnerable to retrenchment, as they have neither the native political constituencies that were both critical to their creation and are deeply invested in their survival, nor do they have the time to develop new constituencies that are both sufficiently powerful and interested enough to protect them from cuts. In other words, because they are targeted rather than universal, they are unstable: because their targeted immigrant constituency is new to the political life of the receiving community and may not even have the right to voter or otherwise participate in civic life, the beneficiaries of targeted programs cannot defend them from the political axe. We can see this dynamic most clearly in

attempts towards *bureaucratic incorporation*, the process by which government officials or bureaucrats in state-funded agencies become advocates for or direct partners with, immigrant communities (Marrow 2009). Bureaucratic incorporation has emerged as a major issue in Europe, as a growing number of countries have developed integration ministries or equality agencies to represent the interests of new immigrant groups. The problem with these state-led efforts is that what the state giveth, the state taketh away: state-created institutions or organizations designed to serve a narrow immigrant constituency can be swiftly rolled back should the political winds change. This kind of policy retrenchment is much harder when institutions or agencies were created to service a much broader constituency: the more people that are invested in their survival, the harder it is to cut them. Therefore, bureaucratic incorporation is more likely to succeed when bureaucracies have a broader mandate than simple migration issues. While this may run counter to what is currently considered 'best practice' in the migration community[10] and it may raise the ire of migrants rights activists who see their issues as distinct from the issues of native minority groups and therefore resent being lumped in with other marginalized groups, in the long run, broader bureaucratic reach may mean more sustained incorporative activity, especially in new destinations where immigrant communities do not yet have the political power to protect allied agencies from retrenchment. Ultimately, open civic institutions are a necessary but not sufficient condition for incorporative activity. Rather, it is the *interaction*

---

[10] States are increasingly ranked by their bureaucratic infrastructure targeting migrants; for example, the Migrant Integration Policy Index (MIPEX) is a EU-funded project to assess integration policies across member states.

between institutions and native constituencies that creates – and perhaps more importantly, maintains – political space for new immigrants.

Plan of the Thesis

Chapter 2 lays out the empirical puzzle at the heart of this thesis. It provides an overview of how the context of migration has changed in the post-war era, and introduces and defines the main outcome of interest, incorporative activity. It goes on to show that existing explanations of incorporative activity cannot on their own explain why we see such variation in incorporative activity within new destinations, even when exploring countries with similar patterns of migration and comparable institutions and native actors. Given the puzzle at hand, it also articulates my research methodology.

Chapter 3 offers a theory of political incorporation in new destinations. It lays out how and why civic institutions and their supporting social narratives that were developed to deal with past conflict among natives get repurposed in order to apply to newcomers, and in turn how this facilitates incorporative activity.

Chapter 4 is a historical case study of Ireland. Although we would expect see significant incorporative activity given its institutions at the time when immigration began to emerge as a major social phenomenon - most notably its liberal non-citizen voting laws and relatively generous citizenship regime - this has not been the case. Instead, Irish political parties have narrowed the previously wide pathway to citizenship and have not engaged in mass migrant voter

mobilization, and both state-led and private partnerships with migrant organizations have been limited and unstable. I show that this is due to how and why these institutions developed. Ireland began the twentieth century as a multinational political entity, but, unable to reconcile the two different political visions for its future, the significant Protestant minority was drawn away through the partition of the island. Yet despite its newfound independence, Ireland inherited a set of civic institutions designed for a multicultural society: the inclusive institutions that existed prior to immigration were a hangover from British rule, rather than deliberate policy decisions directed at inclusiveness. This historical legacy explains both why Irish political elites found it relatively easy to close off access to citizenship, and why political support for migrant capacity-building and the development of migrant-serving bureaucracies faltered: native political actors, most notably parties and unions, had little investment (political or economic) in the development of migrant serving organizations and institutions, and immigrant communities were too new and unorganized to defend their few access points to civic life. Therefore, despite its open civic institutions, incorporative activity in Ireland has been relatively limited and unstable.

Chapter 5 examines incorporative activity in Northern Ireland. In contrast to their southern counterparts, Northern political actors, and in particular, self-identified Irish nationalists, have strongly supported immigrant access to and engagement in civic life: nationalist parties fought against ending birthright citizenship for migrant children, and there have been a number of strategic and

financial partnerships between migrant organizations and both native NGOs and local bureaucracies. I argue that the significant difference in incorporative activity as compared to the south can be traced to the political development of the region's civic institutions – both formal and informal - and the political evolution of its native actors. The past conflict over Catholic civic inclusion, and the violence of the Troubles had a transformative effect on Northern Irish civil society: the demands for greater Catholic civic inclusion led to the development of a social narrative of inclusion and equality that became institutionalized into law through the peace process to end the thirty-year conflict known as the Troubles. In the wake of the conflict, many native political actors, and particularly community associations with roots in the Catholic civil rights movement and the nationalist community, are sensitive to issues of discrimination and marginalization and use their own experiences as cognitive lenses through which to understand and respond to the experiences of new immigrants. Therefore, despite a legacy of violent ethnic conflict, and ongoing sectarian tension, native political actors in Northern Ireland have taken on the task of immigrant incorporation, largely by repurposing the institutions and narratives that came out of their own struggles in order to extend rights to and open political space for new immigrants.

Chapter 6 moves away from Ireland and turns southward to Spain, another new destination country. Given their relatively high unemployment rate, the cultural distance between the native and immigrant population, and its large undocumented workforce, we might expect to see much lower levels of incorporative

activity in Spain than in our other cases – but, in fact, the opposite is true. I argue that Spain's trajectory has been largely shaped by its internal historical conflicts over the representation of its political minorities, most notably trade unions and regional nationalists. The violence and hatred of the 1930s and 1940s, and the repression that these groups faced during the Franco dictatorship not only shaped the formal political institutions that emerged from the process of democratization, but also the informal institutions that structure political behavior: the historical memory of political extremism led to a strong norm of concertation that drove the post-Franco behavior of political actors, most notably parties and unions. When confronted with new minority groups in the form of immigrants (many of whom were racially and/or culturally distinct from native Spaniards), previously repressed groups were some of the biggest advocates for the political inclusion of new immigrants – despite their growing political unpopularity. Interestingly, this is not a simple left-right divide: while it is true that the Franco regime directed much of its ire at left-wing groups (namely socialists, anarchists, and trade unionists), socially and economically conservative regional nationalists were also repressed for cultural and political reasons, and these same conservative Basque nationalists (as represented by the Basque Nationalist Party or PNV) have not gone the route of nationalists in Greece, Italy, Finland or Belgium in making a hard turn to the right on immigration – a significant achievement especially considering the ethnocentric political roots of the PNV and the modern nationalist movement.

Finally, Chapter 7 offers an overview of the empirical evidence, briefly considers how this argument may carry to other countries, discusses the limitations of the argument, and reviews some of the implications of these findings.

Figure 1.1
Immigrants as a percentage of the population, 1960 – 2005 (OECD)
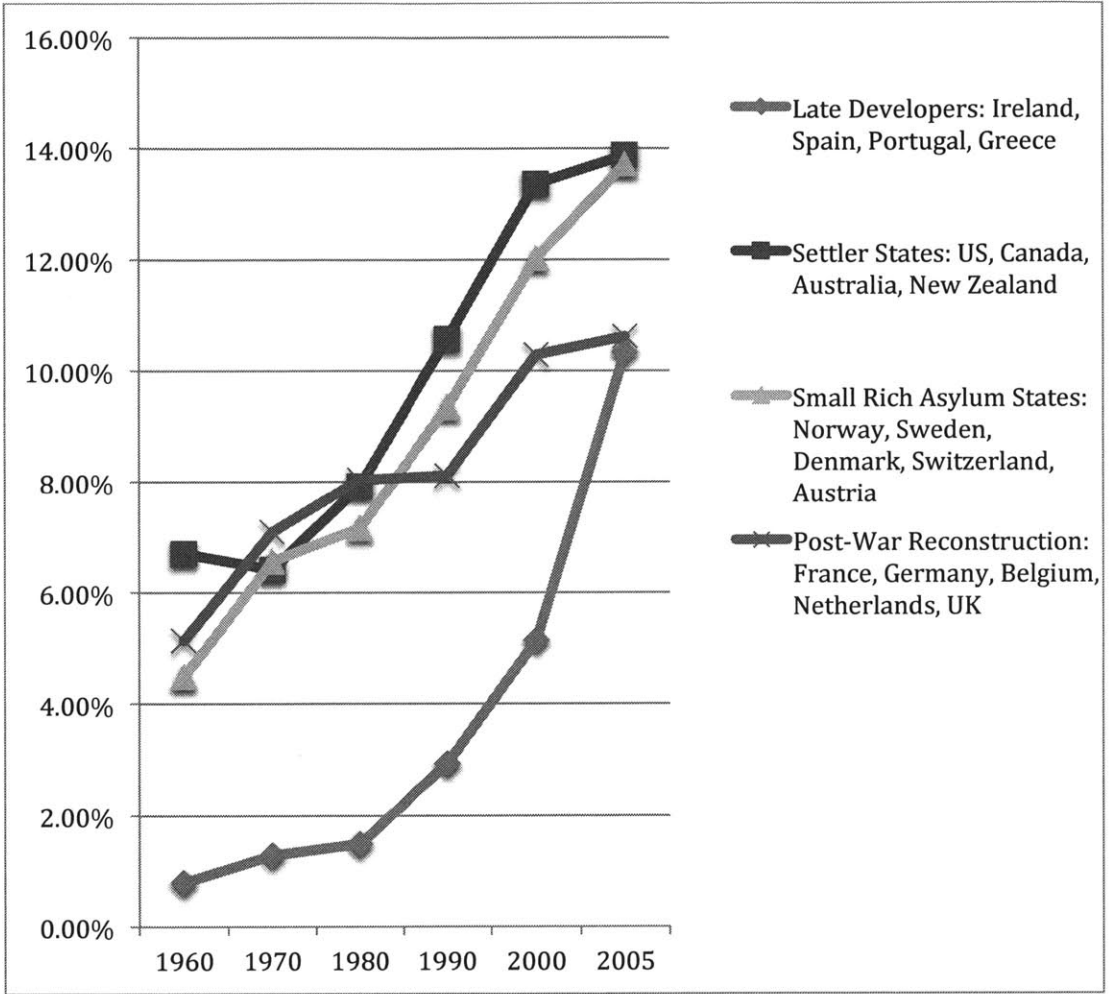
Chapter 2 - Of Ships and Small Islands: Changing Migration Patterns and the Challenges of Incorporation in New Destinations

In the mid-1980s, Ireland was in crisis. After climbing steadily for much of the decade, by 1987 the unemployment rate peaked at 17%, a level not seen in a generation. The lack of available employment drove thousands of workers to the ferry terminals in Dublin and Dun Laoghaire, bound for Liverpool or Holyhead, where they would disembark and continue by train to London. Some went even further afield: the *New York Times* noted that by the end of the decade, there were at least 130,000 undocumented Irish in the Northeast United States alone.[11] These workers entered the country as tourists and, leveraging the extensive Irish networks in Boston and New York, let their visas quietly expire as they slipped into the cash-in-hand pub and construction jobs taken by so many of their compatriots before them. When asked by *Newsweek* magazine on October 1987 about this growing exodus, the then-Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ireland, Brian Lenihan replied, "we can't all live on a small island" (quoted in Mac Éinrí 2012).

Exactly two decades later, Conor Lenihan, the son of the aforementioned Brian, became Ireland's first Minister of Integration, the newly created junior cabinet position tasked with managing the unprecedented influx of immigrants into the Republic. When the elder Lenihan made his infamous "small island" remark, the vast majority (86%) of foreign-born people living in Ireland were UK or US

---

[11] Gold, Allan. "Boston Journal; City's Irish Newcomers Are Illegal, but Not Alien," *New York Times*, 1989, online archive [accessed 13 June 2013].

citizens, and most of these people were of Irish descent (CSO 1986). Once you took UK or US-born immigrants out of the equation, Ireland's foreign-born population was only 1.3%. But by 2006, the US-UK share of the foreign-born population had fallen to 47.7%, Polish were second only to the British amongst the foreign-born population, and there were more Nigerian nationals living in Ireland than Americans (CSO 2008). Non-UK foreign-born had increased six times over, from 1.3% to over 8%. In two decades, this 'small island' went from having the highest level of emigration in Western Europe, to one of the highest levels of immigration, and the diversity of the immigrant population had changed significantly.

Ireland was not the only country in the region to undergo these kinds of dramatic demographic changes: the Mediterranean countries of Greece, Spain, Italy and Portugal also saw increases in immigration during this time. Closer to home, Northern Ireland, geographically part of Ireland but politically part of the United Kingdom, also saw its immigrant population double, then double again in less than a decade, mirroring the rate of change happening next door in the Irish Republic. This rapid transformation of what have come to be known as 'new destination' societies, countries that for most of their modern histories have been places of emigration rather than immigration, raised a series of questions that were new to the late-developing countries of Western Europe, but old hat for many post-industrial Western democracies: in a time of mass immigration when society is rapidly diversifying, would – or could – new immigrants become a part of civic life? More specifically, given the political and economic constraints facing new

destination countries, would political incorporation, namely the process by which immigrants become "a part of mainstream political debates, practices, and decision making" (Bloemraad 2006:6), even be possible?

In this chapter, I explore the question of political incorporation in new destinations by tracing the transition of Europe's late-developing states from places of emigration to countries of immigration. Using a definition of political incorporation that focuses on the actions of native political actors ('incorporative activity'), and examining this phenomenon in Ireland, Northern Ireland, and Spain I show that we *can* identify instances of incorporative activity – but not how or where we would expect. Despite Ireland's immigrant-friendly civic institutions and robust economy, Irish political actors were less engaged in and committed to incorporative activity than their counterparts in Northern Ireland and Spain. This variation seems even more puzzling when we take into account Northern Ireland's recent bloody history of ethnic conflict, and Spain's stubbornly high unemployment rate.[12] I show that this cannot be explained by the existing literature on incorporation that looks to power interests, political identity, or institutions to explain variation, thus setting the stage for the following chapter, where an alternative theory of incorporative activity is offered. I close the chapter with a brief discussion of methods.

---

[12] Even through the boom years of the 2000s, the unemployment rate in Spain never dipped below 10% (INE 2009).

I. Incorporation and the Changing Geography of European Migration

The political incorporation of Europe's latest wave of immigrants has to be understood within the context of broader changes in migration flows both to and within the region over the last several decades. For most of the post-war period, immigration was largely the domain of Northern Europe: the need in the 1940s and 50s to rebuild both the infrastructure and the population of societies shattered by war, combined with a long period of economic expansion that lasted until the oil crisis of the 1970s, led Germany, the UK, France, Belgium, and the Netherlands to seek out foreign labor. Many of these workers hailed from the Mediterranean countries of Southern Europe: thousands of Portuguese, Spaniards, and Greeks fled economic and political chaos at home in search of opportunities abroad [Figure 2.1]. Similarly Ireland, a Northern European country plagued by the same sluggish economic performance and poverty endemic to the Mediterranean countries, underwent a similar exodus: Irish laborers moved to London, Manchester, and other English cities en masse - well into the 1980s, no less.

However, in the 1990s, the dynamics of migration both to and within Western Europe began to change. The migrant-sending states, long at the economic and geographic periphery of the Continent, began showing signs of life: a combination of domestic reforms – many enacted to qualify for joining the euro - and falling birthrates drove economic growth, and perhaps more importantly, put downward pressure on the unemployment rate. By the end of the decade, these countries had

become increasingly attractive to outside investors. They also became attractive to migrant workers [Figure 2.2].

The unprecedented influx of foreigners raised familiar concerns about immigrant political incorporation. This issue has reached the forefront of both theoretical and political debate, particularly in Europe, due to fears that political exclusion may lead to social unrest. From a theoretical perspective, the academic literature on civic participation and social movements has long recognized the relationship between policymaking and inclusion: Robert Dahl noted that for a government to be responsive, institutions need to be structured in a way that allows people to not only form and articulate their political preferences, but to have their preferences "weighted equally in the conduct of the government" (1971: 2). Without a 'seat at the table', namely inclusion in political debates and decision-making, immigrants have no real way to inject their preferences into the political process. This unresponsiveness can escalate into contentious politics when marginalized groups feel that there are no 'conventional' channels for having their grievances heard (Piven and Cloward 1977; Tarrow 1998; Haddad and Balz 2006). For European policymakers, the significance of long-term exclusion has been visibly driven home over the last decade by urban riots in a number of the Continent's capitals, events attributed to the social and political marginalization of immigrants and their descendants.

For purposes of this study, I am particularly concerned about a lack of *incorporative activity*, namely the actions *native* political organizations take in order

to facilitate migrant membership in the polity. These actions can be categorized in

three ways: [13]

1) Actions aimed at opening or maintaining a pathway to citizenship;

2) Actions meant to facilitate inclusion in electoral politics, whether through migrant voter outreach or changing electoral rules to allow for non-citizen participation;

3) Actions meant to build the capacity of migrant organizations to make their own demands on the state, whether through partnerships with native organizations, or direct financial and/or strategic support.

In most countries, citizenship is a necessary requirement for voting rights,

hence why opening or maintaining a pathway to citizenship for immigrants is a key

form of incorporative activity. However, a growing number of countries have made

provisions to allow for non-citizen voting in local elections; these efforts are included

as incorporative activities as well. Immigrant electoral mobilization efforts,

whether through the recruitment of immigrant candidates or voters, are also

included, as elections are central to the political life of democracies. Finally,

capacity-building efforts are also included, although analysis of these efforts is

limited to two key areas: state-sponsored activities, and partnerships between

native organizations and immigrant-led community groups. In recent years, Irene

Bloemraad has been one of the biggest advocates for capacity-building activities,

noting that government subsidies for immigrant community groups have a positive

---

[13] Kirsti Andersen (2010) characterizes these actions as 'taking on the task' of incorporation She actually divides the tasks into four groups: "Encouraging and facilitating naturalization, promoting voter registration, educating people about issues and participatory channels, and providing them with resources and motivations to participate" (2010; 71). However, I group the last two points under 'capacity-building'.

long-term impact on naturalization outcomes, and that direct partnerships can teach newcomers the skills they need to be able to directly participate in civic life (2006).

It should be emphasized that the main focus of this analysis is on the actions of *native* political actors because they play an important signaling function for both fellow native citizens and newcomers. One of the ironies of political incorporation is that immigrants who join the political fray risk being characterized as 'bad guests' rather than good citizens (Fanning 2009); indeed the presence of highly mobilized immigrant communities can lead to backlash from natives who come to see politically active immigrants and their descendants as a threat to scarce resources (Dancyngier 2010). However, the behavior of native political actors can have a positive signaling effect on both natives and immigrants. The attempt to give migrants access to the public sphere, whether through voting or support for community organizations, sends a message to immigrant communities that they are welcome members of the polity; Bloemraad calls these 'symbolic resources' and notes that they "[affect] understandings of citizenship, especially of immigrants' legitimate political standing as citizens and of their ability to participate in the political process" (2006:4). Therefore, the willingness of native political organizations to incorporate immigrants into politics, whether directly through electoral mobilization or indirectly through agenda-setting and advocacy, plays a key role in setting the boundaries of both political debate and the polity - and this boundary setting is something that immigrants, particularly in new destinations,

are not in a position (as both newcomers and political novices in the receiving country) to do.

Finally, it should also be noted that the key outcome of interest here is movement on the part of native political actors to open a pathway to civic life – *not* the results of those actions in terms of individual immigrants. For example, while I examine if natives move to open or close the pathway to citizenship, I do not examine whether or not immigrants choose to actually naturalize, and while I examine migrant voter outreach, I do not measure what effect these programs had on immigrant turnout.[14] In other words, this study is concerned with the *process* of incorporation, rather than 'incorporative outcomes' such as naturalization rates, number of migrant representatives in government, et cetera.

In sum, the scope of this project is limited to a focus on *native political actors*. As the phenomenon of interest is political incorporation, I focus on the behavior of explicitly political organization: mainly parties, but also trade unions and politically active NGOs. The outcome of interest is *incorporative activity*, as measured by actions to open a pathway to citizenship, include immigrants in electoral politics, or engage in capacity-building efforts that would allow immigrants to better understand the political system and have both the financial and strategic resources to make their own demands on the state. While future research on the effect of incorporative activity would be a welcome contribution to our understanding of this

---

[14] Even if the scope of this specific project were not limited, it would be difficult to measure the effect of a given treatment (in this case, a voter registration campaign) without some kind of experiment that tracked and controlled access to political information.

process, particularly in new destinations, my focus for purposes of this project is on outreach, not outcomes.

II. The Challenges of Incorporation in New Destinations

Despite the importance of political incorporation to maintaining social and political stability in the long-term, there are three identifiable stumbling points that may inhibit political incorporation in new destination countries: 1) a lack of migrant-serving institutions and organizations, 2) a lack of social narratives that legitimize the inclusion of immigrants in civic life, and 3) a socio-economic and political climate that presents distinct barriers to incorporative activity.

Organizations & Institutions

First, unlike their counterparts in 'old destinations' countries with a long-standing history of migration, immigrants in 'new destinations' lack the pre-existing migrant-serving organizations and institutions that can help ease entry into civic life.[15] Migrant-serving *organizations* facilitate incorporation by not only helping develop the capacity of immigrant communities to make their own demands directly on the state, but by advocating for policies and resources that benefit immigrant communities. While this is not always a frictionless process – 'old' immigrant organizations do not always support new immigrants – old destinations have dense networks of groups with a long interest in immigrants rights, and

---

[15] It should be noted that the idea that 'old' immigrant organizations may care about mobilizing 'new' immigrants is contested in the American literature on political incorporation; see Erie 1988, Jones-Correa 1998.

political ties to parties and elected officials who make laws affecting those rights; subsequently, the organizational context for new immigrant arrivals in new destinations is fundamentally different than in old destinations.

Migrant-serving *institutions*, on the other hand, can be conceptualized as the "rules and procedures that are created, communicated, and enforced through channels widely accepted as official" (Helmke and Levitsky 2004, 727). Here we can think of a number of legal and administrative guidelines that can shape incorporative activity: rules governing the acquisition of citizenship, voting eligibility, bilingual or translation service mandates, or grant programs can all help ease the entry of new arrivals into civic life. As Waters and Jiménez (2005) note, "Established gateways have numerous institutions set up to aid immigrants, including legal-aid bureaus, health clinics, social organizations, and bilingual services. Previous waves of immigrants have necessitated the establishment of these institutions, and immigrants who arrive today continue to benefit from them" (118).

To put this in perspective, let's take the example of a new immigrant from Brazil who arrived in the Boston area in 2002. She settles in Somerville, an area that has seen multiple waves of migration over the last century, from Ireland, then Portugal and Greece, and more recently, from Brazil, Haiti, and beyond. Many local business owners in Union Square, a key immigrant gateway neighborhood, speak Portuguese, and she will be able to do her shopping and banking in her native language. If she has school-age children, bi-lingual services will be available for

both parents and children. Her local parish will not only be able to connect her to different social service providers that help new immigrant families, it may bring many local families together for important church holidays, linking her to other parishioners who may have memories of their or their parents' experiences of migration. And if she has a problem with city services and needs to call her local city councilor, someone in his office will speak Portuguese, and will know who to direct her to. At a higher level, her Senator has immigrant roots, and his office is very responsive to the issues and concerns of non-citizens. Taken together, at every level of social, economic, or political interaction, there are existing organizations, institutions, actors, and procedures that can not only help ease our protagonist's entry into social and civic life in the United States, but are explicitly interested in doing so.

Now compare the experience of a Brazilian immigrant to Boston to that of a Brazilian immigrant to Galway, a city on the west coast of Ireland. In the 2000s, Brazilians began arriving in Western Ireland in unprecedented numbers, at first to fill a need for skilled butchers and meatpackers, but then due to chain migration. Upon arrival, there were no local businesses to offer formal and informal services in Portuguese. She had no way of getting information about what is going on in her child's school because she does not speak the language. If she had problems with her housing situation, she cannot communicate with her local councilor, and if she had problems with her visa, there is no guarantee that she will get a sympathetic ear from the office of her local *Teachta Dála* (TD), her representative in *Dáil*

Éireann (the lower house of the Irish parliament). In sum, our immigrant in Galway has a completely different experience than our immigrant in Boston: while the latter enters a well-developed social and political infrastructure replete with allies and assistance that can help channel her into civic life, the former essentially has to start from scratch.

Historical Narratives

The second barrier to political incorporation in new destination societies is the lack of a historical narrative that legitimizes the inclusion of immigrants in civic life. Narratives, or as Zald calls them, "frames", matter because they help us "interpret problems, to define problems for action, and suggest action pathways to remedy the problem" (1996, 265). Ganz takes this definition a step further, noting, "Narrative is the discursive means we use to access values that equip us with the courage to make choices under conditions of uncertainty, to exercise agency" (2012, 274). The fear is, because native political actors in new destinations have no narrative of migration to draw from, they lack a cognitive or political roadmap that would help them to take on the task of political incorporation.

The role that social narratives play in helping native actors frame new immigration can be seen in 'old destination' states that have experienced multiple waves of migration. The United States is a good example: although originally settled by immigrants, large swathes of the country have not experienced immigration since their initial period of settlement. Yet current migration patterns

have led to the emergence of 'new destinations' within the U.S.: over the last

decade, immigrants have shifted away from traditional gateway states like

California towards Georgia, North Carolina, and even the Great Plains, places that

have not seen mass immigration in over a century. Despite this gap, native political

actors in American new destinations are still able to use the shared historical

narrative of being a 'nation of immigrants' in order to make the case for new

immigrant incorporation to skeptical fellow natives. For example, Griffith (2008)

notes that in areas of Great Plains and Upper Midwest experiencing new migration,

"Highlighting continuity to a shared past and established tradition is clearly

intended to make immigration palatable to those who are uneasy about the influx of

foreigners; invoking history in communities and regions experiencing new waves of

immigration also implies that recent immigrants, like those before them, will

eventually assimilate into the dominant culture" (189). In a country like the United

States, communities, and even individuals, can draw from their own histories of

successful migration and incorporation in order to make sense of new immigration.

Today's new destinations do not have that luxury.

The New Context of Incorporation

Finally, in addition to the general issues raised above, there are also a few

aspects of the migration process today as compared to previous eras that present

particular challenges to political incorporation. First, the socio-economic context

has changed considerably. With de-industrialization, large trade unions have

shrunk both in size and power across much of Western Europe and North America, and where unions are strong, their membership is primarily in the public sector, an area of the labor market that is often closed to new immigrants due to language or naturalization issues.[16] Because unions are so under-represented in the private sector, particularly so in the low-wage service sector, today's immigrants have lost a key access point to political life that was open to previous waves of migrant workers.[17]

Second, access to citizenship, historically a key stepping stone to participation in electoral politics, has been severely curtailed. In Western Europe, many of the immigrants in the post-war era came from overseas colonies and therefore arrived with citizenship. However, the last two decades have seen a growing number of restrictions on access to citizenship, particularly for immigrants seen as culturally distant from the native population; this is particularly true for Muslim immigrants. (Joppke 2010; Orgad 2010). For the latest wave of immigrants and their children, access to full political rights may be permanently out of reach.

The establishment of the European Union has, somewhat ironically, also contributed to the restrictions on access to citizenship. Member states are loudly critical of countries that they see as having overly generous immigration and citizenship policies, as access to citizenship in one country grants access to the labor

---

[16] A notable exception is immigrant employment in the public health care sector.
[17] This is not to say that, in the past, all unions welcomed immigrants with open arms: American unions, in particular, have struggled with the issue of immigration (Hill 1996; Fine and Tichenor 2009). More recently, migrant worker centers have appeared as an alternative to unions, particularly in sectors of the economy like constructions with a disproportionate percentage of undocumented workers; see Fine 2006.

market and social services in all member countries. Subsequently, in recent years there has been a sort of 'race to the bottom in placing restrictions on not only citizenship, but on immigration in general. In addition, since they have access to both the labor market and to local elections, immigrants in EU member states who are also EU citizens may have little incentive to complain about economic or civic exclusion. Given that complaints are a major driver of both political participation and reform - immigrant political engagement is often driven by the perception of being discriminated against or mistreated in some way (Pantoja et. al. 2001) – this system of 'tiered' EU/non-EU citizenship deprives immigrant communities of both political oxygen and power in numbers. It is much harder for non-EU immigrants to make common cause with EU immigrants over hot-button issues like access citizenship and residency or unfair treatment in the labor market because immigrants from EU countries are guaranteed labor and social rights by virtue of their status as EU citizens.

Finally, this wave of migrants to Europe faces particular challenges to incorporation because the current political and social discourse across the continent characterizes attempts to incorporate earlier waves of migrants as a failed process. Perhaps the most visible example of this was Angela Merkel's 2011 declaration that multiculturalism[18] "has failed, utterly failed"[19] a statement that was echoed by UK

---

[18] What is multiculturalism? Okin defines it as "the claim, made in the context of basically liberal democracies, that minority cultures or ways of life are not sufficiently protected by the practice of ensuring the individual rights of their members, and as a consequence these should also be protected through special group rights or privileges" (1999). Politically, multiculturalism means that there is a tension around living in societies where the cultural beliefs and practices of immigrant communities are perceived to be at odds in some way

Prime Minister David Cameron[20] and French President Nicolas Sarkozy.[21] Urban riots and terrorism, often carried out by second and third generation immigrants, have cemented this view in the eyes of the public, who increasingly vote for far-right parties with harshly anti-immigrant agendas.[22] The specter of the far-right has often pulled centrist – and even left-wing - parties further to the right (Bale et. al 2010; Yilmaz 2012), leading to a rash of legislation over the last decade restricting immigration, whether through strict numerical limits on entry or screening for cultural compatibility. These political battles have not gone unnoticed in new destination countries, where they have been heavily covered in local media. Therefore, although immigration may be a new phenomenon in countries like Spain, Portugal and Ireland, a new destination country is not a tabula rasa: the political discourse around immigration in neighboring countries has filtered into both discourse and policy in new destinations, and this may affect how native political actors perceive the issue of immigration at home.

---

with the beliefs and practices of the native majority. Most of the tensions around multiculturalism in Europe revolve around the question of Islam, and the long-term compatibility of Muslim immigrants and largely secular natives.

[19] Siebold, Sabine, "Merkel says German multiculturalism has failed," *Reuters* October 16, 2010, http://www.reuters.com/article/2010/10/16/us-germany-merkel-immigration-idUSTRE69F1K320101016.

[20] "David Cameron on Immigration: full text of the speech," *Guardian* (UK), April 13, 2011.

[21] "Multiculturalism has failed, says French president," *AFP*, February 10, 2011.

[22] In recent years, far-right anti-immigration parties have been voted into office in Sweden, Finland, the Netherlands and Greece.

III. Repopulating the Small Island: Migration in Ireland and Northern Ireland

Given this gloomy outlook, we would expect to see limited, if any,

incorporative activity in new destinations. However, the situation on the ground is

more complicated when we explore the situation in the country that underwent the

most dramatic shift from emigration to immigration over the last two decades:

Ireland.

The political, economic, and social history of Ireland has been most

profoundly shaped by out-migration for the last two centuries. The most pivotal

event that shaped the demography of the island was the Great Famine of the mid-

1840s: between 1841 and 1861, starvation, disease, and emigration drove the

population down from 6,528,799 to 4,402,211, a collapse so dramatic that by 2006

the population still had not recovered.[23]

The other key event that drove major demographic changes on the island was

its partition in the 1920s into a newly independent twenty-six county state and a

six-county province that remained part of the United Kingdom. Starting in the 17th

Century with the Plantation of Ulster, the process of deliberately resettling

Protestants (primarily from Scotland) in Ireland's northernmost province, the

population of the island was split between a largely impoverished Catholic majority

and a Protestant minority. For over two centuries, Ireland was a multicultural

---

[23] According to the Central Statistics Office of Ireland, the population of Ireland was 4,588,252 in 2011. All figures are for the twenty-six counties that make up the present-day republic, and are available through the CSO website with interactive tables "Beyond 20/20": http://census.cso.ie/census/ReportFolders/ReportFolders.aspx?CS_referer=&CS_ChosenLang=en.

entity within the United Kingdom: the 1911 census (the last before independence) put the total population of the island at 74% Catholic and 25% Protestant, with most of the Protestant population concentrated in the northeastern counties.[24]

However, the differences between these two groups were more than cultural, they were political: Ireland was not just multicultural, but multinational. As the movement for Irish political autonomy accelerated in the late 19th century, the Protestant population of the island became alarmed by the prospect of being a minority within a Catholic majority state ruled from Dublin, not London. Unionism, the predominately Protestant movement to remain part of the United Kingdom, emerged as a political force on the island and in the British Parliament. Rising violence on the island and political battles in London eventually led to a compromise that would completely reshape the demographics of the island: Ireland would be split into a Catholic-majority 'Free State' and a Protestant-majority 'Northern Ireland'. By the time the dust settled in 1926 (the first census after partition), the population of new Irish Free State (later known as the Republic of Ireland; heretofore referred to as 'Ireland' or 'the Republic') was over 92% Catholic and 7% Protestant (CSO 1926), while Northern Ireland was 33.5% Catholic and 66.5% Protestant (Government of Northern Ireland 1926).

Partition also had a lasting economic impact on Ireland. Belfast, the largest city in the newly created Northern Ireland, was home to the island's textile mills

---

[24] "Protestants" includes Church of Ireland (Protestant Episcopalians), Presbyterians, Methodists, and Baptists. Most of the historical census data for the Republic has been reformatted to reflect the geography of post-partition Ireland, so pre-partition data was recreated by merging information from the Central Statistical Office of the Irish Republic and the Government of Northern Ireland 1926 census report.

and later its shipyards; with partition, the Free State lost, with a stroke of a pen, what little industry it had. In the wake of partition, autarkic economic policies in the Republic stunted growth for decades. High birthrates, in part fueled by conservative Catholicism, put enormous pressure on the labor market, and a weak economy generated additional waves of emigration in the 1950s and 1980s [Figure 2.3]. By 1987, the Irish unemployment rate stood at 17%, and thousands of Irish citizens were leaving for the UK, Australia, and the United States.

However, due to a series of events in the 1980s and 1990s, this human tide began to turn. In the Republic, the economic crisis of the 1980s sparked the beginning of a series of reforms that led to a period of unprecedented macroeconomic stability. First, the development of 'social partnership', a tripartite bargaining agreement between the government, employers, and Irish trade unions, ushered in an era of labor peace, contributing to Ireland's burgeoning reputation as a business-friendly place to invest. In addition, trade-oriented economic reforms that started in the 1960s but gained momentum in the 80s and 90s meant that Ireland had one of the lowest corporate tax rates in the newly created euro zone. Finally, the convergence process to join the euro led to tighter fiscal controls at home, curbing some of the excesses of Ireland's notoriously clientelist political culture. Combined, these policy changes ushered in an unprecedented period of economic expansion that, in a parallel to the 'Asian Tiger' economies of the 1990s, came to be known as the 'Celtic Tiger'. This era of economic reform and vitality won Ireland the attention of investors from around the world, in particular the United

States. It also put Ireland on the radar of a heretofore unthinkable group: foreign workers.

From 1981 to 2006, the foreign-born population of Ireland increased at an unprecedented rate, rising from 6.7% in 1981 to 14.7% in 2006 [Table 2.1]. The change seems even more dramatic when you take UK-born citizens out of the analysis: in 1981, only 1.3% of the Irish population was born outside of Ireland or the UK; by 2001, this figure stood at 4.7% and by 2006, this figure had nearly doubled to 8.2%. The acceleration in the migration figures from the mid-2000s onwards was largely due to Ireland's decision to allow workers from the new EU accession states of Central and Eastern Europe to have immediate access to their labor market [Table 2.2a, 2.2b].[25]

Interestingly, starting in the 1990s, Northern Ireland saw a similar shift. Not surprisingly, for much of the latter half of the twentieth century, Northern Ireland was not on the radar of investors or migrant workers due to the thirty-year civil conflict known as 'the Troubles'.[26] However, in April 1998, key government and political officials signed the Good Friday Agreement, also known as the Belfast Agreement (heretofore referred to as the 'GFA' or 'the Agreement'), bringing a formal end to the Troubles and laying out a new set of political institutions to

---

[25] While EU member states could defer work permits for citizens from new member states for up to seven years, Ireland, the UK, and Sweden allowed immediate labor market access for the new accession states of 2004. In Ireland, this decision was driven by the very tight labor market and record low unemployment.

[26] A popular, if non-confirmable, anecdote in Belfast claims that the situation in the 1970s was so bad that a boatload of Vietnamese refugees brought to be resettled in Northern Ireland refused to leave their ship; they were not keen to step into the middle of a new maelstrom of violence having just left one behind.

manage both day-to-day governance and the explosive social and political dynamics

of the region. Economic activity, which was sluggish during the years of the

conflict, began to increase and, as in Ireland, this made the region more attractive

to both investors and foreign workers. Subsequently, the heretofore largely

negative net migration rate slowed in the 1990s and turned positive in the 2000s

[Figure 2.4].

Between 1996 and 2002, the foreign-born population of Northern Ireland

doubled, and from 2002 to 2006 it doubled again, then again by 2010, when it

reached an estimated 80,000 people [Figure 2.5; Table 2.3a] (NISRA 2011).[27] As in

the Republic, much of this growth was fueled by the influx of Central and Eastern

European workers [Table 2.3b]. Like Ireland, the United Kingdom also opened its

labor market to citizens of the new accession states in 2004, and the Eastern

European population alone rapidly rose from almost nothing in 2003 to 39,000 in

2009 (NISRA 2010). As in the Republic, this rapid shift began to generate concern

over if – and how – these new arrivals would become a part of civic life.

IV. Incorporative activity in Ireland and Northern Ireland: a curious case of divergence

Given Northern Ireland's recent history of violent ethno-nationalist conflict,

and Ireland's explosive economic growth during this period, we might expect to see

more incorporative activity in the Republic than its more volatile northern

neighbor. Yet the opposite is true along multiple measures: while Irish nationalists

---

[27] In Northern Ireland, figures for the foreign-born population exclude those residents who were born in the Republic.

in the Republic moved to end birthright citizenship, nationalists in Northern

Ireland fought to maintain a pathway to citizenship. While parties on both sides of

the border have not engaged in mass migrant voter outreach efforts, migrant's

rights and minority political inclusion are more integrated into the platforms and

politics of Northern parties than their Southern counterparts. Finally, and most

dramatically, while strategic and financial partnerships between immigrant

communities and native political actors have been limited and unstable in the

Republic, in Northern Ireland this has not been the case [Table 4].

Citizenship

A key point of divergence in incorporative activity between political actors in

the North and in the Republic was over the issue of birthright citizenship. The

1998 Good Friday Agreement and subsequent legal changes created an unusual

situation where the citizenship rights of the Irish Republic extended beyond the

borders of the state to include Northern Ireland.[28] This was to allow members of the

Catholic-Nationalist-Republican (CNR) community in Northern Ireland, who by and

large politically support the reunification of the island as an independent republic,

to have political membership – i.e., citizenship – in Ireland, even though they were

born as British citizens.[29]

---

[28] Articles 2 and 3 of the Irish constitutions were changed as part of the Good Friday
Agreement to include the following: "It is the entitlement and birthright of every person
born in the island of Ireland, which includes its islands and seas, to be part of the Irish
nation. That is also the entitlement of all persons otherwise qualified in accordance with
law to be citizens of Ireland. Furthermore, the Irish nation cherishes its special affinity
with people of Irish ancestry living abroad who share its cultural identity and heritage".
[29] The constitution also had to be changed because Article 2 laid claim to the entire island of

Given that immigration was a non-issue for most of the twentieth century in Ireland, the 1998 birthright citizenship clause in the constitution was not highly controversial. However, with an increase in immigration, and in particular, asylum-seekers from sub-Saharan Africa, there was growing public debate as to whether or not the asylum system was being abused in order to take advantage of the citizenship loophole. Claims appeared in the press that immigrant mothers were arriving in Dublin in the latter stages of pregnancy with the explicit goal of having an Irish-born child, in a form of so-called "citizenship tourism".[30] Although these claims were contested, the government proposed a referendum on a constitutional amendment to end birthright citizenship. Polling ahead of the referendum showed wide public support, and the actual initiative passed with over 78% of participants voting 'yes' to ending birthright citizenship.[31]

Despite the political popularity of the citizenship initiative, there was clear divergence on the issue, most notably among the political parties most closely tied to Irish nationalism - or more specifically, *republicanism* - Fianna Fáil and Sinn

---

Ireland: "The national territory consists of the whole island of Ireland, its islands and the territorial seas." A core component of the GFA was the issue of consent: in this case, Ireland gave up its claim to the North, which under the new post-GFA institutions, can only be reunited with the rest of Ireland with the consent of the people who live there (i.e. a referendum).

[30] See McDowell, Michael, "Proposed Citizenship Referendum" *Sunday Independent*, March 14, 2004; Brennock, Mark, "McDowell changes argument on referendum," *Irish Times*, April 9, 2004; "Ireland: Citizenship Tourists," *Economist*, June 3, 2004, http://www.economist.com/node/2734580. These claims were eerily similar to those made in U.S. immigration debates over 'anchor babies', children allegedly born in order to give undocumented parents a toehold in American society; see Julia Preston, "Anchor Baby: A Term Redefined as a Slur," *New York Times*. December 8, 2004.

[31] Irish referendum results are available online at: http://www.referendum.ie/archive/display-ballotid=76&page=0.php.

Féin.[32] For over two centuries, the specific objective of the republican movement

has been to establish an independent Irish republic that encompasses the entire

island of Ireland. Both parties have their roots in the fight for independence and

the multiple schisms that followed: Sinn Féin dominated Irish politics in the run up

to independence in the 1920s, but key leaders split from the party over the issue of

partition and later formed Fianna Fáil, which styled itself 'the republican party'.

Sinn Féin later re-emerged as a political force in the North during the Troubles,

when Northern republicans began to consider politics as an alternative to violence.

In addition, both parties have historical ties to various iterations of the Irish

Republican Army (IRA): leading Fianna Fáil figures were involved with the IRA in

the war for independence, and the Provisional IRA, which emerged out of Belfast in

the 1960s, had strong ties to the re-emergent Sinn Féin of that era. Ultimately,

more than any other parties in Irish history, Fianna Fáil and Sinn Fein are

identified with republicanism and the willingness to take up arms in order to

establish their vision of an Irish republic, a vision that often defined the Irish

nation in strict ethno-cultural terms as both Gaelic and Catholic.[33]

---

[32] The republican movement can be split into two camps: constitutional republicanism, which sees legal change as the key means for establishing a thirty-two county republic, and physical force republicanism, which sees the use of violence as a legitimate means of meeting political ends.

[33] It should be noted that there is a great deal of disagreement among those who self-identify as republicans over the mantle of modern-day republicanism. While this is a legacy claimed by many Fianna Fáil supporters, more radical republicans would look askance at the party's conservatism, and a subset sees both the Irish and the British governments as illegitimate – the only legitimate representation of the Irish people is through the original 32-county Dáil, not the current version, which only covers the twenty-six counties of the Republic.

Yet despite this shared history, Fianna Fáil and Sinn Féin took very different positions on the citizenship referendum. Bertie Ahern, the then-Taoiseach (prime minister) and leader of Fianna Fáil, argued that people with no connection to Ireland were abusing the citizenship laws, and his Justice Minister, Michael McDowell (a member of the Progressive Democrats), was even more vocal in his support of the legislation, and personally advocated for it both in the Dáil and with the public.[34] However, Sinn Féin was actively opposed to the referendum: its representatives in the Dáil spoke out against it, and the head of the party, Gerry Adams, personally campaigned against it.[35]

This divergence on the citizenship issue was notable for several reasons. First, Sinn Féin's vocal opposition to the referendum was surprising, given their political ambitions in the Republic. While in Northern Ireland, Sinn Féin is the largest nationalist party and the second largest party in the province[36], in the Republic, it is an opposition party that, until recently, consistently lagged behind both Fine Gael (historically the Republic's second-largest party) and the Labour Party. Given the popularity of the Citizenship Referendum proposal among both the general population and Sinn Féin voters, coming out in favor of it might have been an easy way to build political support, but the party took the opposite approach. Therefore, Sinn Féin's opposition to the referendum seemed to work *against* its

[34] Department of the Taoiseach. 2004. "Voting YES will mean Ireland will continue to have one of the most liberal citizenship laws in Europe". Press release. May 26.
[35] Sinn Féin, "Gerry Adams calls for No vote in citizenship referendum," *press release,* May 31, 2004.
[36] In Northern Ireland, parties in the regional parliament have to identify themselves as Unionist (i.e. they want to remain part of the UK) or Nationalist (they want to see a united, independent Irish republic).

campaign to expand its base in the Republic, rather than in its favor, a surprising

move for a party that is widely acknowledged – even by their detractors - to be

savvy, ruthless campaigners and political organizers.

In addition, the divergence over the citizenship referendum was notable

because of the grounds on which republican parties supported or opposed the

proposal. For Fianna Fáil, the overarching narrative was largely procedural: the

citizenship statute was a loophole in the law that people were exploiting, and it was

in the best interest of the state – and of local health care provision – to close it. For

Sinn Féin, the issue was not one of legal strictures, but rather one of discrimination.

In a public statement, Sinn Féin argued:

> We are urging people to vote NO to the Government's flawed, ill-conceived and what
> we believe is ultimately a racist referendum. We are unequivocal in that opposition.
> We are opposed to both the content and the processes involved...And we utterly
> reject the Government's contention that this proposal is either necessary or desired.
> We stand by the 1916 Proclamation which declares that we should "cherish all the
> children of the nation equally". This referendum and the dishonest arguments put
> forward by the Government are a fundamental betrayal of that proclamation and
> indeed are also against the spirit and intent of the Good Friday Agreement.[37]

Given the issues at stake, citizenship is a key issue for which we would

expect to see ideological and political coherence from republican parties. However,

not only was this not the case, but the party with the most recent ties to violent

republicanism is the one that was the most opposed to ending birthright citizenship

– and they did so despite the fact that the amendment had support from a majority

of voters, both within and outside of the party. It is puzzling, and more than a little

---

[37] Sinn Féin, "Citizenship referendum a violation of Good Friday Agreement and a betrayal of the 1916 Proclamation," *Sinn Féin Press Release* (May 21, 2004).

ironic, that the most ardent defendant of a pathway to citizenship for immigrants was the party that had also been the most ardent defendant of the use of appalling violence in the name of Irish political and cultural identity.

Electoral Politics

The second key area of incorporative activity involves attempts by native political actors to get new immigrants involved in electoral politics. Actions in this regard include migrant voter registration and mobilization campaigns, and movement to extend suffrage to non-citizens. Suffice to say, incorporative activity in this area has been relatively limited and sporadic on the part of parties on both sides of the border, but to some extent community organizations and local bureaucrats have tried to make up the difference.

Ireland is notable because it has some of the most open electoral institutions in the world for non-citizens: any adult who has been resident in the state for at least six months before election day is eligible to vote in or stand for local elections. This right holds regardless of immigration status: even asylum seekers waiting for the government to process their claims can participate in local elections. Northern Ireland, on the other hand, allows non-citizens to vote in local elections if they are citizens of the European Union, a right that is required of all EU member states. Under UK law, qualifying citizens of the Commonwealth also have voting rights. However, this still leaves many of Northern Ireland's immigrants without voting rights.

Given the limitations on voting rights in the North, and the fact that Northern Ireland has a higher percentage of non-EU immigrants than the Republic, we might expect to see more incorporative activity in the South than the North, since there are more immigrants who are eligible voters. In addition, parties in Ireland do not have to try to figure out which immigrants are actually eligible because the voting laws are universal; therefore, they do not have the information problem that their northern counterparts do. However, Irish parties have been surprisingly lax when it comes to migrant electoral mobilization. A study of Ireland's major political parties during the run-up to the 2004 local elections found that no Irish political party had immigration or migrant-related issues as part of their party platforms, and parties did not seem to see immigrants as an electorally relevant group (Fanning and Mutwarasibo 2007). For the next local election cycle in 2009, the results were mixed. While the two largest parties did hire immigrant outreach coordinators for the 2009 cycle, migrant community organizations noted that they primarily targeted Eastern Europeans (who had not demonstrated any great interest in Irish electoral politics) instead of the 'low-hanging fruit', namely African immigrants who were keenly interested in politics, especially after a Nigerian was elected to local office in 2004. These coordinators were let go after the elections, and it is not apparent if there is long-term interest within Ireland's largest parties to engage with immigrant communities; as one migrant community activist put it "when the economy was good and people were coming, the government's rationale was 'this is new, so we don't know what to do and we can't

do anything'; now that the economy is bad, the story is "well, they're all going to leave anyway, so we shouldn't do anything" (NGO12, personal interview, Dublin, June 2009).

Despite the failings of political parties, there was another key group that tried to take on the task of incorporation: local bureaucrats. Dismayed by the lack of party engagement with immigrant communities, the Dublin City Council partnered with migrant-led organizations to launch an immigrant voter registration drive and information campaign, but efforts to bring together the political parties for a migrant community forum failed, and some participants openly despaired of both the parties and the electoral bureaucracy's handling of the elections.[38] Therefore, in Ireland, to the extent it exists, electoral incorporative activity has largely been a function of *bureaucratic* incorporation, whereby local bureaucrats – who are ostensibly non-partisan actors – take on the task of helping new immigrants become a part of "mainstream political debates, practices, and decision-making" (Bloemraad 2006, 6). This finding is consistent with recent work on new destinations in the United States where local bureaucrats rather than elected officials took on the task of substantive representation, namely enacting policies and programs in order to help new immigrants integrate into society (Lewis and Ramakrishnan 2007; Jones-Correa 2008; Marrow 2009).[39] However, this approach

---

[38] Based on interviews conducted by the author in Dublin in 2009 and 2010. The migrant voter registration campaign issues will be discussed in-depth in Chapter 4.

[39] In contrast to descriptive representation, where groups represent themselves, substantive representation is where one group may act on behalf of another group. The general assumption in new destinations is that because new immigrants usually lack both

is limited: bureaucrats rely on elected officials for funding, and migrant-serving programs and organizations were the last to receive funding in good times, and the first to see their program and funding streams cut when the economy began to falter. Therefore, despite the best intentions of some city government officials in Ireland, incorporative activity has been limited by political control over financial resources. In a perverse outcome, the political instability of state-funded migrant-serving organizations and programs has actually *increased* immigrant community antipathy towards the state in some quarters, thus working at cross-purposes with the government's stated interest in migrant civic inclusion and avoidance of future social conflict with disenfranchised first and second-generation immigrants.

Incorporative activity around elections has been fairly limited in Northern Ireland as well. That said, the attempts of some parties to distance themselves from sectarianism have created 'neutral' political space for the engagement of immigrant candidates and communities: the Alliance Party, the only party in the regional parliament that does not identify itself as nationalist or unionist, has positioned itself as a champion of migrant rights and civic inclusion. However, because local elections and governance are a relatively new post-conflict phenomenon in the North – the regional parliament only operated intermittently between 1973 and 2007 – many politicians are still trying to figure out what *their* roles are in local politics, much less the role of newcomers. To the extent that there is electoral incorporative activity, at least one party (out of the five largest) saw

---

knowledge about the political system and political rights – although there are exceptions – native political actors will represent their interests in the political sphere for them.

putting immigrants on the ballot as a potential means of mobilization, with the thinking being that the prospect of descriptive representation, and the utilization of immigrant networks would help to drive turnout for a migrant candidate – and their affiliated party.[40] However, here the onus seems to be on the individual, rather than the party, to rally supporters – a key distinction given that immigrant communities know less about the region's politics, the process of voting, and even the language. Therefore, as with Ireland, party-led immigrant political incorporation in Northern Ireland has been relatively limited. Interestingly, immigrant community organizations were aware of the bureaucrat-driven migrant voter campaigns in the Republic, and indicated in interviews that they wanted to do something similar in the North, so it remains to be seen if Belfast and Derry will catch up to Dublin and Galway in developing local processes for electoral bureaucratic incorporation.

Capacity-building

I define capacity-building in two key ways: financial partnerships with immigrant organizations, or strategic partnership with immigrant organizations. Both actions are meant to build the capacity of immigrant organizations to make their own demands on the state and claim a seat at the table of power. First, the direct funding of migrant organizations has been shown to increase their political and social integration over time (Bloemraad 2005). For governments with a stated

---

[40] There is some theoretical support; studies on Latino electoral behavior have found that strong ethnic identification and/or having a co-ethnic on the ballot can drive turnout; see Barreto 2007; Barreto and Pedraza 2009.

interest in this process, making public funds available to migrant-led organizations is an important form of incorporative activity. Direct strategic partnerships between native political actors and immigrant organizations can help migrant groups quickly learn the political ropes, and raise the visibility of these groups to the level of native organizations.

In Ireland, capacity-building initiatives have been sporadic and unstable. Financially, support for migrant-led organizations has been relatively difficult to come by: migrant-led groups have often had to look beyond the government to private foundations or the European Union for funding, and what little funding is available locally tends to get filtered to native organizations that show an interest in migration-related issues, even if addressing migration-related issues is not their primary mission. The government did put money into setting up several key organizations meant to support immigrant communities or serve as a bridge between immigrant and native political leaders, but these strategic partnerships did not survive the budget cuts that started in 2008 and the change in government in 2011.[41] In addition, turnover issues plagued several key initiatives. For example, the Office of the Ministry of Integration, which was set up to not only monitor the immigration situation but to engage in strategic partnerships with migrant-led community organizations, had three different ministers over its four-year life span, making both trust and capacity-building difficult.

---

[41] The National Consultative Committee on Racism and Interculturalism (NCCRI) was closed in January 2009, and the Equality Authority, the Irish Human Rights Commission and the office of the Minister for Integration faced sharp budget cuts. In 2011, the Office of the Minister for Integration was folded into the Department of Justice and Equality.

In Northern Ireland, the dynamics of capacity-building have been quite different. Financially, migrant-led organizations have been able to access government funding meant to promote good 'community relations', even though this money was originally earmarked to address relations between Catholics and Protestants. Northern Ireland also has a dense network of local foundations that have been willing to fund small community development programs with a focus on good community relations and bridge-building, and that includes migration-related issues. Significant strategic partnerships have also emerged, most notably between trade unions and migrant associations, in order to provide legal and social services in migrant communities and act as a bridge to local elected officials. While the situation is not perfect – some immigrant groups are not comfortable using the banner of sectarianism to deal with the issues of xenophobia and racism – the civic focus on issues of mutual tolerance, understanding, and inclusion has created the political space for new immigrant groups to engage in and benefit from partnerships with native organizations.

V. A Third Case: Spain

Moving away from the tangled history of the British Isles, this project explores a third case: Spain. Spain, like Ireland, is a new destination country: in 1998, the foreign-born were only 1.6% of the population (INE 2004), but by 2011, this figure had risen to 13.5% [Table 2.5]. Of all of the late-developing states of Western Europe, Spain and Ireland experienced the greatest levels of immigration

in the 1990s and 2000s [Figure 2.6]. And as in Ireland, a huge percentage of the immigrant population is from countries that share historic, linguistic, and cultural ties: in 2006, close to 48% of Ireland's foreign-born were from the UK or US (CSO 2008), while in Spain around 40% of the foreign-born population was from Latin America (INE 2009) [Table 2.6].

Spain also has some other similarities to the Irish cases that make for an interesting comparison. First, as in Ireland, civil war politics have carried over into present-day party formation and politics: Spain's two major parties, the *Partido Socialista Obrero Españoles* (the Socialist Worker's Party, heretofore referred to as the Socialists or PSOE), and the *Partido Popular* (heretofore referred to as the Populares, or PP) loosely draw their support from the groups that formed the two sides in Spain's civil war.[42] Second, violent separatist nationalist groups have also been key players in national and regional politics: the IRA in Ireland and ETA (*Euskadi Ta Askatasuna* or 'Basque Homeland and Freedom') in the Spanish Basque Country have forced governments in Dublin, Belfast and Madrid to confront political violence in the name of an ethno-nationalist community. Radical Basque nationalists and hardline Republicans in Northern Ireland have a particularly close political and cultural relationship, and Sinn Féin officials have even participated in on attempts to bring hardline Basques with ties to ETA into electoral politics. Finally, both Spain and Ireland are countries where the Catholic Church has historically played an important role socially, culturally, and politically.

---

[42] The PSOE has close historical ties to liberals, republicans, and trade unionists, while the PP is linked to Catholic conservatives, monarchists, wealthy landowners and industrialists.

Taken together, the economic and social context of migration, and some of the political and cultural similarities between Spain and Ireland would lead one to expect to see similar patterns of incorporative activity. But this, surprisingly, is not the case. The first area where we see significant differences between Spain and Ireland is on citizenship policy. The key difference here is that Spain has, through multiple amnesties, put access to permanent residency – and subsequently, citizenship – in reach for hundreds of thousands of immigrants. Since 1990, there have been several major 'regularizations' in Spain (1991, 1996, 2000, 2001 and 2005), with the largest in 2005 when over 700,000 undocumented immigrants were granted papers. Regularization is a key step on the pathway to citizenship: eligibility for naturalization is based on length of residency in the country (anywhere from two to ten years).

The second key difference we see is in incorporative activity in the area of electoral politics. This happens through two key channels: opening access to electoral politics through changing voter eligibility rules, or through direct campaigns to encourage migrant voting or even migrant candidates. In Ireland, there is no need for the former, given the open non-citizen voting laws, but there was limited incorporative activity for the latter. In Spain, native political actors have been very active in both areas. Under the Spanish constitution, non-citizen voting rights are reciprocal at the individual country level: for example, if Country X allows Spaniards to vote in their local elections, citizens of Country X can vote in Spanish local elections. As a practical matter, until the mid-2000s, non-citizen

voting rights were generally – though not exclusively - limited to citizens of other

member states of the European Union. However, the Spanish government enacted

bilateral agreements with several key immigrant-sending states, and by the 2011

elections, nationals of nine non-EU countries were eligible to participate: Colombia,

Peru, Paraguay, New Zealand, Iceland, Cape Verde, Chile, Ecuador, and Bolivia.

These countries were selected based on whether or not their laws allowed for (or

could be changed to include) non-citizen voting for Spanish citizens, and/or if they

were major migrant sending states to Spain. Because it is based on democratic

reciprocity, the system does not cover all immigrants: migrants from authoritarian

states, or places without free and fair elections, are not eligible for Spanish local

voting rights because Spaniards (and arguably natives!) in these kinds of regimes

would not be allowed to vote. This means that while non-citizen voting is not

universal, between 60-70% of Spain's immigrant population is eligible to vote [Table

2.7].[43]

Capacity-building is an area where Spain stands out from Ireland - and even

Northern Ireland. In Ireland, and in the North, access to financial resources for

migrant-led organizations is generally through pre-existing native organizations.

But in Spain, migrant-led organizations have access to a pool of money from the

national government specifically set aside for their use (Integra). The national

government has also directed financial support to Spain's seventeen *comunidades*

autonomas ('autonomous communities') and municipal governments for migrant

---

[43] A notable exception here is the Moroccan population, which is the second largest
immigrant group in Spain: approximately 14% of the foreign-born population in Spain for
most of the last decade (INE 2007, 2011).

outreach and integration programs. In addition, since the 1990s the government

has sponsored an integration forum consisting of elected officials, immigrant and

native NGOs, employer associations, and trade unions in order to weigh in on

immigration-related legislation.[44] This strategic partnership creates a statutory

seat at the table of power for migrant organizations, and helps build to both social

and political networks between migrant organizations and native political groups.

Are there critical difference between Spain and Ireland that may account for

the variation in incorporative activity between the two countries? There are three

that should be taken into consideration: Spain's high levels of illegal immigration,

its large Muslim population, and the structure of its political institutions.

First, Spain, unlike Ireland, is a "border country": it lies at the edge of

Europe in close proximity to much poorer neighbors. Prior to the 1990s, this meant

Spain was a transit country for Moroccans and sub-Saharan migrants heading to

France, Belgium, and beyond, but as its economy improved, Spain transitioned from

being a gateway to somewhere else in Europe to being a destination in and of itself.

Therefore Spain has experienced much higher levels of illegal immigration than

Ireland, which is protected by geography; in 2004, the undocumented population in

Spain was estimated to be 700,000, over 20% of the total immigrant population.

Nevertheless, Spain's government has moved to include these immigrants in civic

life through its regularization programs, rather than exclude them. The behavior of

---

[44] Interestingly, the structure of the immigration forum in Spain is similar to the
bargaining structure of Ireland's much-vaulted 'social partnership' model for managing
industrial relations and social policy. Social partnership was established in the 1980s, but
is all but dead due to the current economic crisis.

the Spanish government stands in sharp contrast to its Irish counterpart. In Ireland, when immigrants were seen as trying to game the system by arriving under the guise of asylum in order to establish residency and work[45], the pathway to citizenship was narrowed. In Spain, when thousands of immigrants arrived under the guise of tourism in order to work - even without the proper work or residency permits - the government saw fit to regularize them.

Second, while over 40% of its immigrant population is culturally similar to the native population, Spain has a relatively large percentage of immigrants from predominately Muslim countries. Not surprisingly, given Spain's proximity to North Africa, 17% of the foreign-born in Spain are from the Maghreb (INE 2011). Given that Muslim immigration is a politically toxic issue across much of Europe, we would expect to see limited incorporative activity from Spanish political actors, especially those concerned about gaining favor with the public. But, again, this has not been the case: North African organizers are part of the trade union leadership, PSOE officials have pushed to extend local voting rights to Moroccan immigrants living in Spain, and in Catalonia, the region of Spain with the highest levels of Muslim immigration, North Africans are even involved in Catalan nationalist politics.

Finally, the structure of Spanish political and electoral institutions differs significantly from Ireland. The main difference is that while Ireland is centralized, the Spanish government is extremely decentralized. This may provide some

---

[45] Or not work – one key stereotype of asylum seekers is that they are just seeking to leech off of the (relatively limited) welfare state.

incentive for native actors to engage in incorporative activity, due to the fact that there are presumably more entry points into politics in a federal system – local government has more responsibility for services, there are local, regional, state and national elections, etc. However, it is not clear if this is an advantage when it comes to the behavior of native political actors in regards to political incorporation because it may be outweighed by the structure of Spanish party system. Spain's parties use a strictly controlled candidate list, rather than open primaries or individual-level voting. Mollenkopf and Hochschild (2010) note that party list systems serve to *inhibit* the political incorporation of immigrants into electoral politics, and the more individual-oriented voting in the US creates more space for minority engagement, and in particular minority candidates, for their aspirations are not held hostage by party dons. Therefore, it is difficult to determine a priori when and how electoral institutions matter for incorporative activity: while we may expect to see more incorporative activity in Spain due to its decentralized structure, on the other hand we may expect to see more incorporative activity in Ireland because candidates and voters are not bound by a party list system.

Overall, the majority of the differences that exist between Spain and Ireland are those that would lead one to expect to see more incorporative activity in Ireland than Spain. Yet this is not the case at all. For every measure of incorporative activity, Spanish political actors have gone beyond their Irish counterparts [Table 8]. Given that the socio-economic context does not seem to explain these differences, are there alternative explanations?

VI. Explaining Variation in Incorporative Activity

Given the similarities between the cases, what explains the variation in incorporative activity? There are three identifiable groups of explanations: 1) the *power interests* of political actors, 2) the *identities* of political actors, and 3) the *civic institutions* that shape political engagement.

Political Power Interests

The most basic explanation for why some political actors choose to incorporate new immigrants is because they would derive some kind of political advantage from doing so. The classical argument is that groups that are seeking to gain power will look to mobilize unorganized groups in order to build their power base (Dahl (1974) 2005; Schattschneider 1960; Erie 1988; Banks 1991; Frege et al 2003; Krings 2009). By organizing unorganized groups, political actors, particularly those who are outside the halls of power, may be able to leverage a 'seat at the table' for themselves through more voters or more members, namely new immigrants.

However, the interest-based approach is problematic, for several reasons. First, over the last twenty years, small opposition parties in Europe have been able to build their vote share by mobilizing *against* immigrant communities, not reaching out to them: this has proven to be a winning electoral strategy for Golden Dawn in Greece (also a new destination country), the Swedish democrats (SDs), the True Finns in Finland, and Vlaams Belang in Belgium (among others). And despite

the fact that trade union membership has declined precipitously – particularly in the private sector - unions have been slow to mobilize the fast-growing migrant labor pool. This is despite the fact that many migrants – including undocumented migrants – are friendly to labor unions and may have even have extensive experience with union and political organizing in their home countries (Delgado 1993). Taken together, there is limited empirical evidence to suggest that power interests explain differences in incorporative activity.

Political/Organizational identity

Some political actors may take on the task of incorporation – even when it seems to be somewhat irrational – due to their organizational identity. This identity can be based on the group's founding principles (Milkman 2006), ideology (Putnam 1971; Sewell 1985; Poletta and Jasper 2001), self-defined mission (Marrow 2009) or place on the political spectrum (Hooghe et al 2002), but the main idea is that identity explains why sometimes political actors may behave in ways that do not seem rational based on existing power dynamics: their behavior is instead driven by a need to adhere to ideology, not the accumulation of power.

However, the identity explanation is problematic in that it does not necessarily allow us to make predictions about how a group will respond to immigration. The behavior of republican parties in Ireland around the citizenship referendum is a prime example: we would expect, given their shared political history and identity as republicans, to see Fianna Fáil and Sinn Féin on the same

page when it came to citizenship – especially given that republicanism is fundamentally about the relationship between the imagined community of the Irish nation and the state. Citizenship, therefore, is critical to republicanism – hence the insistence on giving anyone on the island who identified themselves as members of the Irish nation access to citizenship through the Irish state even if they did not live under the jurisdiction of that state. Yet on this most fundamental of issues, there was profound disagreement within the same ideological movement, with Sinn Féin opposing efforts by Fianna Fáil to end birthright citizenship.

Another issue with the identity approach is that identities are not fixed over time. Again, the evolution of Sinn Fein is instructive. When the party was founded in the early 20th century, its leader, Arthur Griffith, was a strident advocate of a particularly ethno-cultural stream of Irish nationalism – yet, a century later, the party's current leader, Gerry Adams, stood in front of the Dáil with a megaphone and proclaimed his support for immigrant families with Irish-born children that faced deportation. Somewhere along the line, Sinn Fein – which means 'We Ourselves' in Irish – shifted from a very closed idea of "ourselves" to a more expansive notion of the Irish nation. The Basque Nationalist Party (PNV) in Spain underwent a similar transformation: Sabino Arana, a founder of the party, saw Basques as a separate and superior race to other Spaniards, but later party officials distanced themselves from Arana's position. In both Ireland and the Basque country, the idea of what it means to be a nationalist, and who can be a member that community has been remarkably flexible over time, and reducing actors to

these political labels tells us little about how they see themselves or their place in national and civic life.

Ultimately, the identity argument cannot tell us why similar organizations, with similar missions and identities still respond so differently to immigration. The inability to predict how a labor union, social democratic party, or nationalist organization will respond to immigration suggests that it is not necessarily the organization's place on a political spectrum that matters, but rather something about how they construct their own identities within that system that may tell us something about how and why they choose to take on the task of migrant political incorporation.

Civic Institutions and Incorporative Activity

Civic institutions are the rules that govern political engagement. These institutions shape political life in a number of ways: they not only affect who has access to the polity, but how they can make their voices heard in the public sphere. Civic institutions are no different than any other kinds of institutions in that they do not just coordinate behavior, but are "power-implicating instruments that unevenly distribute resources and constitute collective actors" (Mahoney 2010, 3). Civic institutions can redistribute power resources through the funding of civic organizations, or the inclusion of certain actors in decision-making processes, and can constitute collective actors through delineating what determines an interest group, an eligible voter, or even a citizen.

The most basic function of civic institutions is to shape who can be a member of the polity. The first step in this process is usually acquisition of legal citizenship: a majority of countries make being a legal citizen – i.e. being entitled to a passport, the right to freely enter and leave the country, etc. - a requirement for political participation, especially when it comes to electoral politics. These laws serve a gatekeeping function: they draw clear boundaries of membership, and that membership carries privileges. Therefore changes to rules governing legal citizenship have implications for incorporative activity: because they delineate the boundaries of the polity, they may shape the incentives of political parties, who may not want to spend political capital on non-citizens that cannot reward them at the ballot box. We would then expect to see more incorporative activity in places where there is more open access to citizenship.

Electoral institutions can also influence incorporative activity, for they not only dictate who can run or vote, but how those votes are counted and distributed. Lijphart (1999) notes that civic institutions can be described as majoritarian or consensus-based:

> [The consensus model] does not differ from the majoritarian model in accepting that majority rule is better than minority rule, but it accepts majority rule only as a *minimum* requirement: instead of being satisfied with narrow decision-making majorities, it seeks to maximize the size of these majorities. Its rules and institutions aim at broad participation in government and broad agreement on the policies that the government should pursue. The majoritarian model concentrates political power in the hands of a bare majority – and often even merely a plurality instead of a majority, as Chapter 2 will show – whereas the consensus model tries to share, disperse, and limit power in a variety of ways (pg. 2).

Lijphart goes on to note that in diverse societies, consensus-based institutions such as proportional representation, coalition-building, and corporatist

state-society relations are all means of ensuring that there is broader social and political consensus when decisions are made than there would be if only a bare plurality of voters or citizens were required. Therefore, we would expect to see more incorporative activity when civic institutions are consensus-based, rather than majoritarian.

However, recent comparative research on political incorporation challenges the notion that Europe's consensus-based institutions are better for immigrants. Mollenkopf and Hochschild (2010) note that, under systems of proportional representation, the party list systems used to draw up the ballots are often the responsibility of party barons rather than members; subsequently, it is much easier for parties to ignore or block out migrants from party politics in Europe than the United States. In the US, 'renegade' candidates can do an end-run around party bosses in the primaries, and if they make it to the general election, the party rulers will have to support them anyway. In addition to parties, it is not clear that having the kinds of consultative 'tripartite' bargaining institutions that bring together the government, unions, and employer associations actually work to the benefit of new immigrants: as Erie (1998) noted, political organizations that are entrenched in power have little incentive to engage in incorporative activity, and recent research on unions and immigrants shows that when unions are more embedded within the state, the less interest they take in mobilizing new immigrants (Gorodzeisky and Richards, forthcoming).

The institutional argument does not seem to hold when we look at our cases. When migration first began in the 1990s, Ireland was one of the few Western countries with birthright citizenship, its electoral institutions were some of the most open in the world to non-citizens, and "social partnership", the consultative body that governed Irish industrial relations and social policy was not only in full swing, but was considered an ideal 'third way' model for organizing interests in Western democracies. Yet despite all of Ireland's purported institutional advantages, Spanish political actors were far more willing and able to take on the task of incorporation than their Irish counterparts. The institutional argument becomes even more puzzling when one takes into account the fact that Ireland and Northern Ireland actually *share* key civic institutions – most notably, citizenship – yet there is still significant variation in incorporative activity. Therefore, while it would be hard to argue that institutions are irrelevant when it comes to incorporative activity – certainly when Spain opened up immigrant voting to new groups, it unleashed a torrent of political activity targeting newly enfranchised immigrants – civic institutions on their own are not sufficient to foster incorporative activity.

VII. Methods

The variation in incorporative activity across Spain, Ireland and Northern Ireland presents a clear empirical puzzle. In order to shed light on an explain this puzzle, I have chosen to design historical comparative case studies of new destination societies in Western Europe. Comparative studies have been growing in

importance within the field of migration studies; as Bloemraad (2011) notes, "It is hard to know what is special, or odd, about a particular outcome or process without a comparative reference point" (pg. 1151). More broadly, comparative historical analysis is a long established approach for the researcher who wants to understand processes of institutional change over time (Mahoney and Rueschemeyer 2003; Mahoney and Thelen 2010).

For this project, I took an inductive approach, building my theory through the research process. I spent sixteen months collecting data in Spain, Ireland and Northern Ireland, relying on both national legislative and organizational archive in order to create historical case studies, as well as interviews with over one hundred political elites in Dublin, Belfast, Madrid and Bilbao.[46] I made multiple trips to each site, building and refining my theory as the process of learning about each new case enhanced my understanding the prior one. I held the four types of organizations for my analysis constant across all of my cases, meeting with 1) elected politicians and party activists, 2) community activists (natives and immigrants), 3) bureaucrats, and 4) trade union officials. I also attended public meetings, conferences, demonstrations and strikes, and observed firsthand some of the tensions between the direction of political elites and the sentiments of their mass publics. I supplemented my collection of archival documents, government data, interviews, and field notes with data from secondary literature, including historical analyses and press reports.

---

[46] Please see Appendix A for a detailed description of my fieldwork and interviews.

VIII. Conclusion

Dramatic changes in patterns of migration over the last two decades have revived old fears about the political incorporation of immigrants, albeit within a new social and economic context. As I have shown in this chapter, while some of the concerns about incorporative activity in new destinations may be unwarranted, existing arguments do not sufficiently explain what is happening in Spain and Ireland, Europe's two most visible cases of late developing states that turned into destination countries relatively recently. Native parties have in some instances taken on the task of incorporation, even at significant political risk to themselves, groups that share ideological roots and political objectives have differed in their approach to new immigrants, and while the openness of civic institutions to immigrants may have some bearing on incorporative activity, it seems to be only a sometimes necessary and clearly insufficient condition. What then explains the clear variation in incorporative activity in Europe's new destinations? In the next chapter, I offer an alternative argument that does not solely focus on institutions or actors and their motivations, but rather looks to the origins of institutions, the construction of political identities among native actors, and the interaction of the two to explain why and how native political actors are both willing and able to take on the task of incorporation.

Figure 2.1:
Net Migration Rate, Late Developing States Five-year cycles, 1955-2010
(OECD 2010)
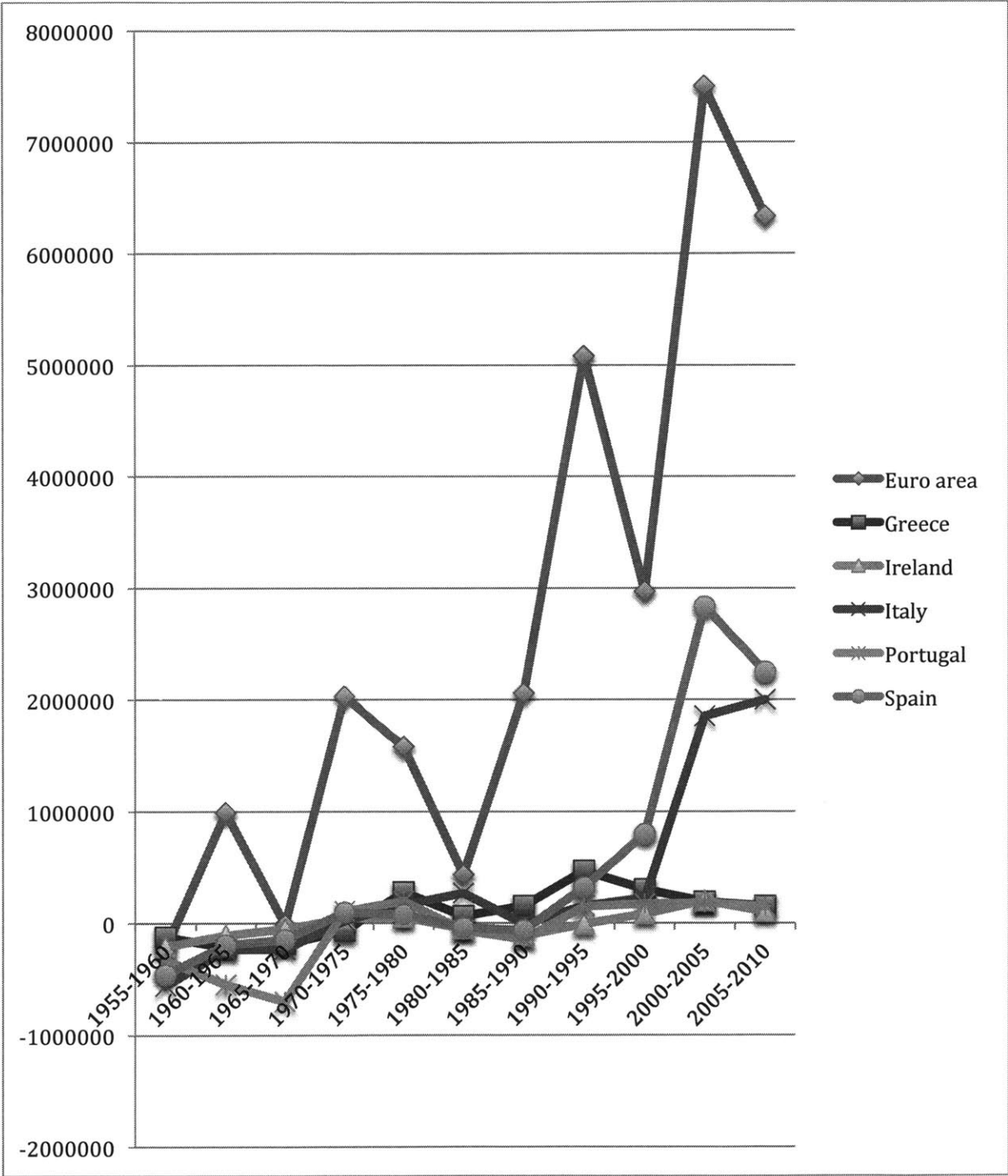
Figure 2.2:
Immigrants as a percentage of the population (OECD)

Legend:
- Late Developers: Ireland, Spain, Portugal, Greece
- Settler States: US, Canada, Australia, New Zealand
- Small Rich Asylum States: Norway, Sweden, Denmark, Switzerland, Austria
- Post-War Reconstruction: France, Germany, Belgium, Netherlands, UK
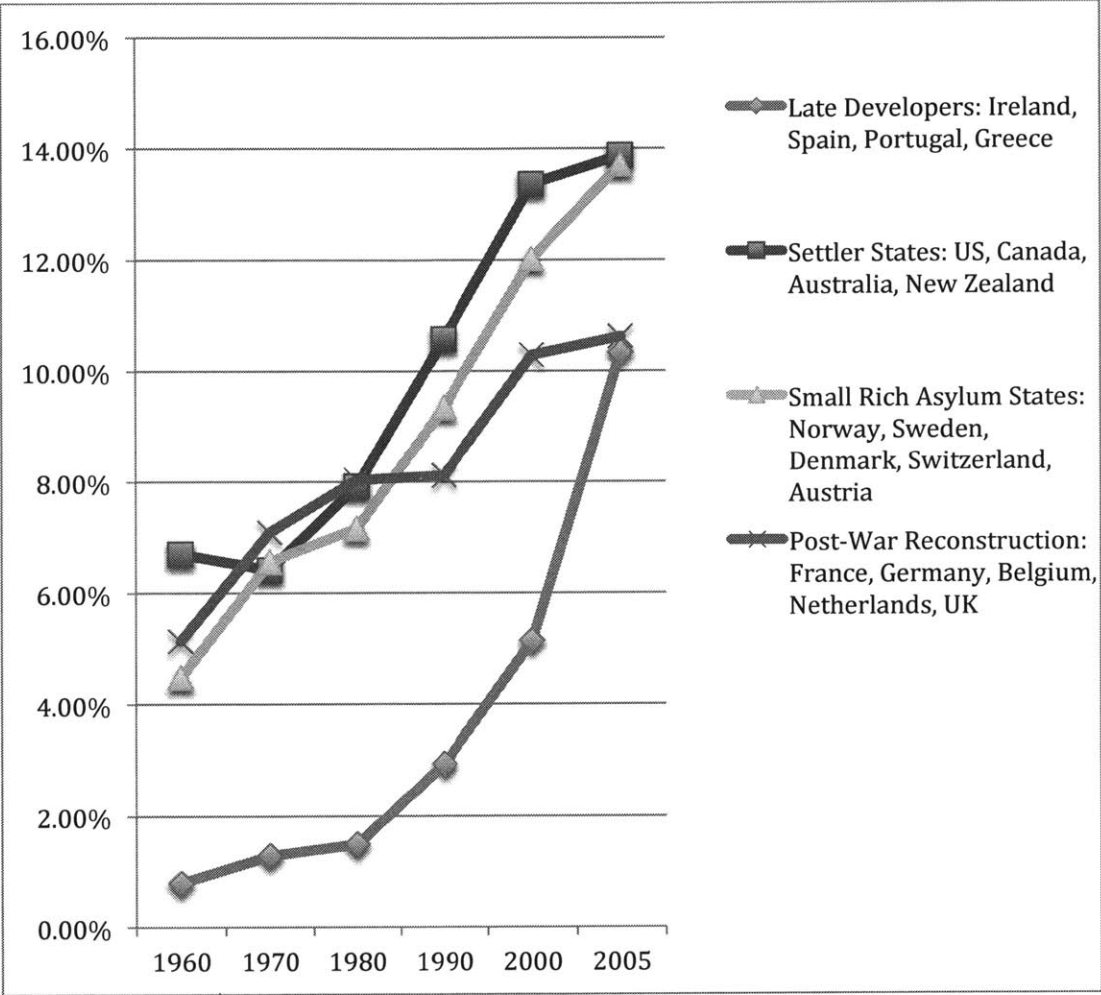
Figure 2.3:
Unemployment in Ireland 1988-2009 (Statistical Yearbook 2010)
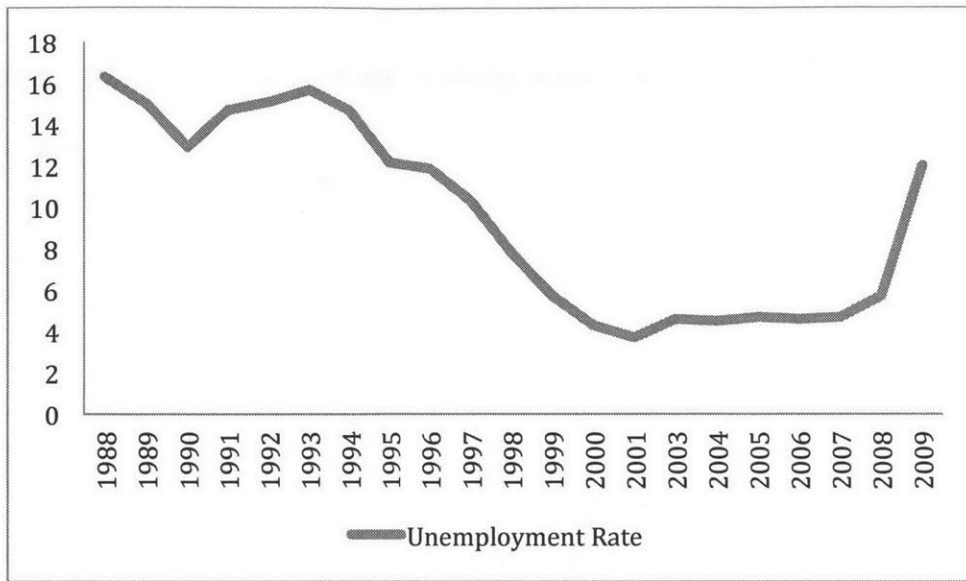
Figure 2.4: Net migration rate, Northern Ireland, 1973-2008 (NISRA 2010)

Figure 1: Estimates of long-term net migration - Northern Ireland (1973/4 - 2008/9)
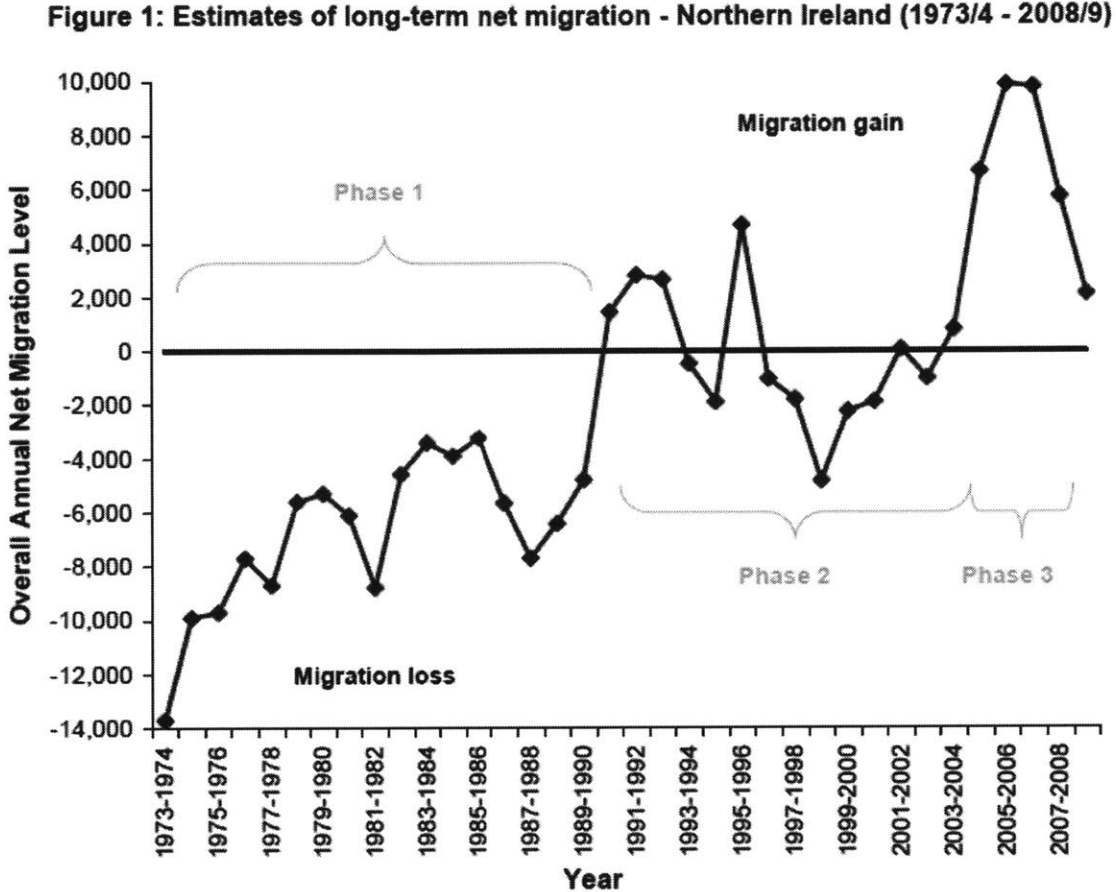
Figure 2.5: Foreign-Born Population of Northern Ireland, 1997-2010 (NISRA 2011)

Figure 5: LFS-based Estimates of non-UK/RoI Born Persons (January 1997 to June 2010)
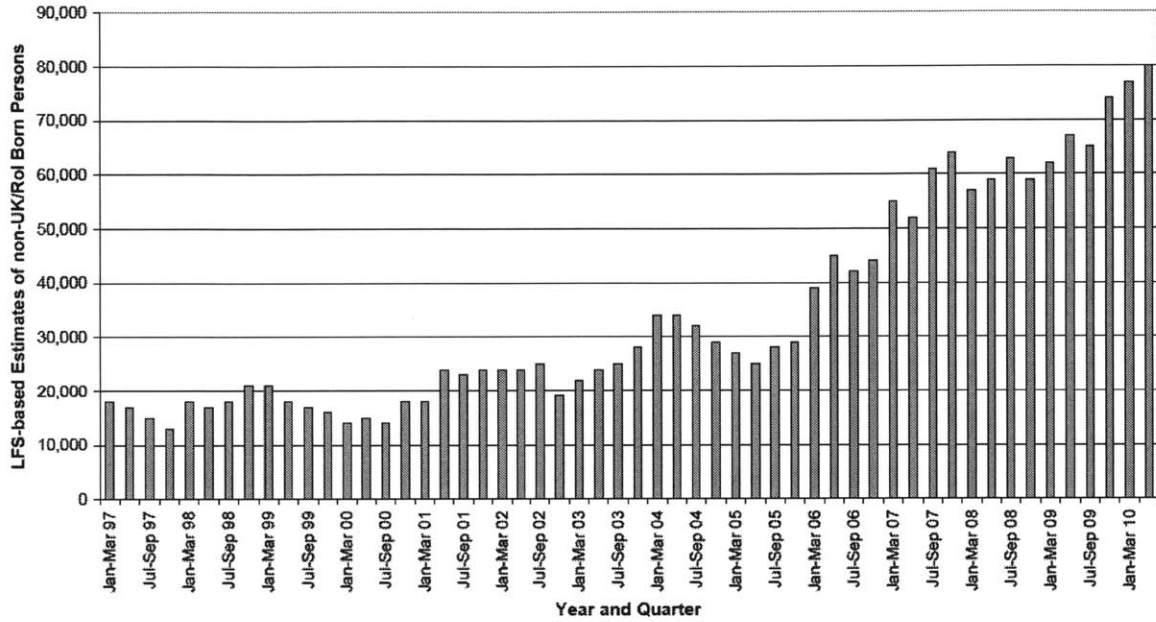
Figure 2.6:
Foreign-born population in Spain and Ireland 1960-2005 (OECD)
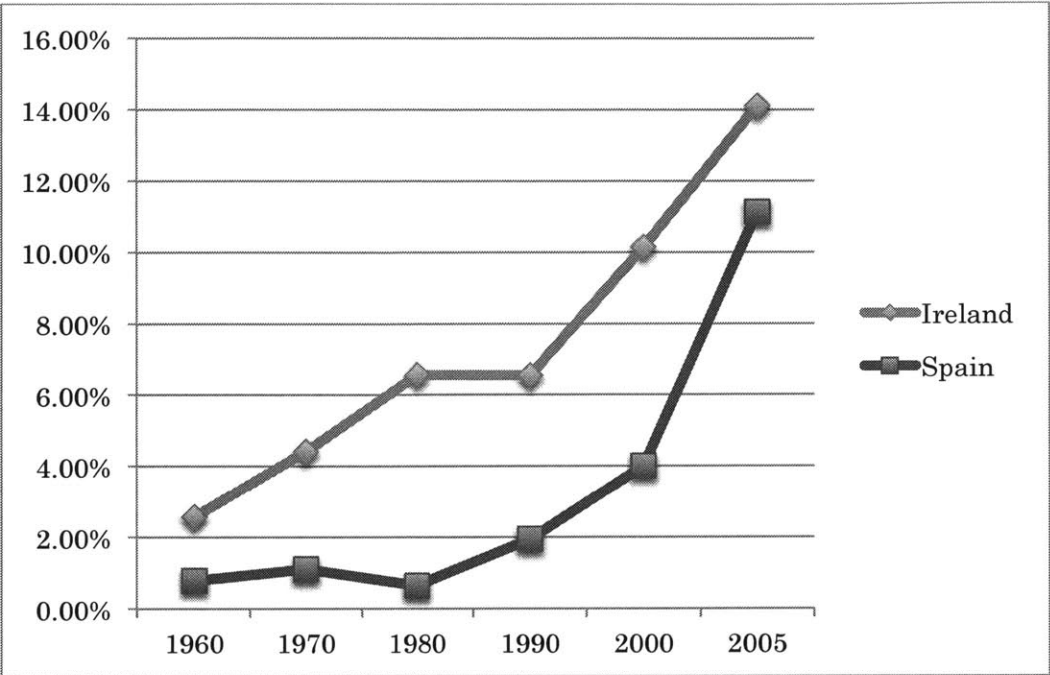
Table 2.1:
Foreign-born as a percentage of the population, Ireland[47]

Year	% Foreign-born	% Foreign-born minus UK citizens
1981	6.7%	1.3%
1986	6.3%	1.3%
1991	6.5%	1.6%
1996	7.5%	2.1%
2001	11.4%	4.7%
2006	14.7%	8.2%

[47] Data in this table is from the CSO "Beyond 20/20" website, that allows you to build tables online from census data:
http://census.cso.ie/census/ReportFolders/ReportFolders.aspx?CS_referer=&CS_ChosenLang=en.

Table 2.2

Table 2.2a: Foreign-born population of Ireland by region of birth, 2006 (CSO Interactive)

Region of Origin	Population	Percentage of the Foreign-born population
UK	271,781	44.4%
Europe (not including UK and Ireland)	194,225	31.7%
USA	25,181	4.1%
Africa	42,764	7.0%
Asia	55,628	9.1%
Other	23,050	3.8%
TOTAL	612,629	100.0%

Table 2.2b: Top sending-states as a percentage of the total non-Irish national population (CSO Interactive) [48]

Country	Population	% of non-Irish national population
United Kingdom	112,548	26.8%
Poland	63,276	15.1%
Lithuania	24,628	5.9%
Nigeria	16,300	3.9%
Latvia	13,319	3.2%
USA	12,475	3.0%
China	11,161	2.7%
Germany	10,289	2.4%
Philippines	9,548	2.3%
France	9,046	2.2%

[48] Note the distinction between the foreign-born population, and the non-Irish national population. On Question #5 of the Irish census, respondents are asked, "What is your place of birth? Give the place where your mother lived at the time of your birth. If IRELAND (including Northern Ireland), write in the COUNTY. If elsewhere ABROAD, write in the COUNTRY" (#5) and "What is your nationality". On Question #6, respondents are asked, "What is your Nationality? If you have more than one nationality, please declare all of them". Respondents then have the choice to check "Irish", "Other NATIONALITY, write in" with space to answer, and/or "No nationality". Therefore, while foreign-born is clearly defined, it is left to the respondent to define nationality. This explains the huge fall-off between the UK-born population in Ireland (271,781), and the number of people who self-report as having UK nationality (112,548): many people who were born in the UK are of Irish heritage, and would likely define themselves as Irish nationals despite their foreign birth. A similar drop-off happens when you compare figures for the U.S.-born population and the U.S. non-Irish national population.

Table 2.3:
Foreign-born population of Northern Ireland

2.3a: Foreign-born population of Northern Ireland 1998-2010

Year	Total Population	Foreign-Born Population	Foreign-born as a % of the population
1998	1677769	19000	1.1%
1999	1679006	21000	1.3%
2000	1682944	15000	0.9%
2001	1688800	18000	1.1%
2002	1697500	24000	1.4%
2003	1704900	22000	1.3%
2004	1714000	34000	2.0%
2005	1727700	26000	1.5%
2006	1743100	39000	2.2%
2007	1761700	55000	3.1%
2008	1779200	57000	3.2%
2009	1793300	61000	3.4%
2010	1804800	79800	4.4%

2.3b: Foreign-born population of Northern Ireland by region of birth, 2007 (NISRA 2010)

Country or Region of Birth	Northern Ireland 2007
Ireland	36.2%
Other Europe	30.9%
Eastern European Accession States (% of total migrant population)	*24.5%*
Rest of the World	33%
TOTAL	100.0%

Table 2.4:
Incorporative Activity in Ireland and Northern Ireland

| Country | Pathway to Citizenship | Electoral Engagement | | Capacity-building | |
		Non-Citizen voting rights	Immigrant voter mobilization	Organiza-tional Funding	Organiza-tional Inclusion
Ireland	Republican party fought for restriction in 2004	Pre-existing	Limited party-led activity; bureaucratic incorporative activity	Limited and unstable	Limited and unstable
Northern Ireland	Republican party fought against restriction in 2004	Limited to EU and Commonwealth citizens	Limited	Limited directly; extensive indirectly	Extensive

Table 2.5:
Foreign-born as a Percentage of the General Population, Spain, 1998-2010
(INE 2013)
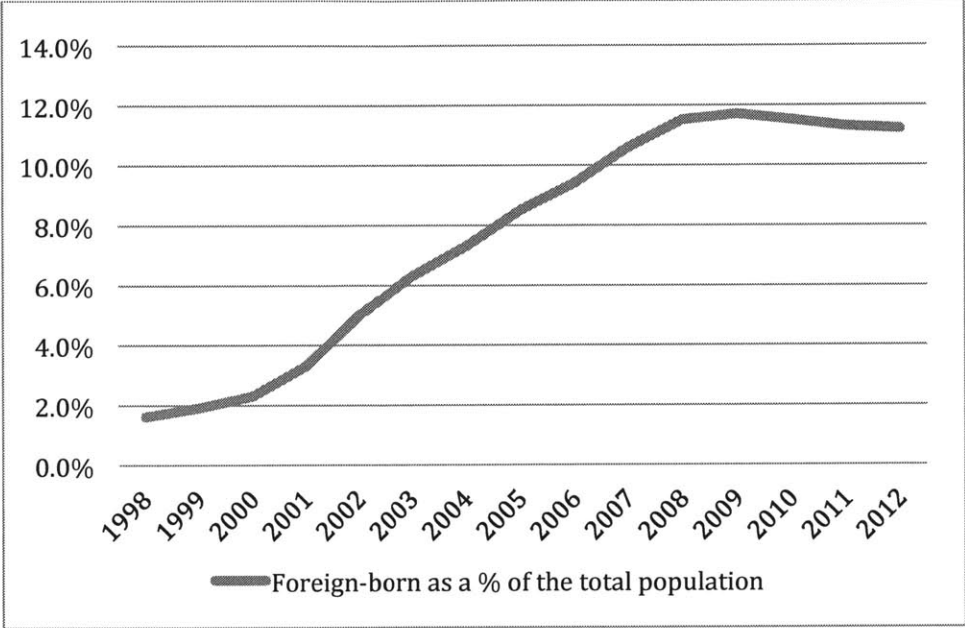
Table 2.6:
Region of Origin, Foreign-born population, Spain (2011)

Region	Population	% of foreign-born population	
Europe	1721474	38%	
Americas	1821215	40.2%	
Africa	767587	17%	
Maghreb	*606104*		*13.4%*
Asia	216244	4.8%	

Table 2.7:
Foreign-born population by ten most represented sending countries,
Spain (2011)

Country	% of Foreign-born population in 2002	% of Foreign-born population in 2011
Romania	5.2%	14.9%
Morocco	14.2%	13.6%
United Kingdom	6.1%	6.5%
Ecuador	14.6%	6.4%
Colombia	9.2%	4.8%
Bolivia	n/a	3.4%
Italy	2.5%	3.4%
Germany	4.9%	3.3%
Bulgaria	2.0%	3.0%
China	1.9%	2.9%

Table 2.8:
Incorporative Activity in Ireland, Northern Ireland and Spain

Country	Pathway to Citizenship	Electoral Engagement		Capacity-building	
		Non-Citizen voting rights	Immigrant voter mobilization	Organizational Funding	Organizational Inclusion
Ireland	Restricted in 2004	Pre-existing	Limited party-led; bureaucratic incorporative activity	Limited and unstable	Limited and unstable
Northern Ireland	Restricted via 2004 decision in Ireland	Limited to EU citizens	Limited	Limited directly; extensive indirectly	Extensive
Spain	Expanded in 2000s	Expanded in 2000s	Party-led mobilization	Extensive	Extensive

Chapter 3 - Constituents Without Citizenship? Immigrant Political Incorporation in New Destinations

Men make their own history, but they do not make it just as they please; they do not make it under circumstances chosen by themselves, but under circumstances directly encountered, given and transmitted from the past.
- *Karl Marx, The 18th Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte*

Incorporative activity, namely actions taken on the part of native political actors to include immigrants in civic life, is increasingly seen as a difficult, if not impossible process. Whether due to the structure of institutions, the interests or identities of native political actors such as parties and unions, or the characteristics of migrants themselves, there are fears that immigrants, particularly those in Europe, are forever doomed to be objects of, rather than active participants in, political life. These concerns are particularly grave when it comes to 'new destinations', places where immigration is a relatively new phenomenon, as the literature suggests that they are unlikely have the institutional resources, the interested civic organizations, or the shared historical narratives to both guide and motivate native political actors to take on the task of incorporating new immigrants.

Given this gloomy outlook, we would not expect to see a great deal of incorporative activity in today's new destinations - yet surprisingly we do. Native political parties have launched immigrant voter registration drives, moved to open access to citizenship, and provided both material and strategic support to immigrant community organizations. However, this activity is not uniform: we also

see examples of native actors who are either indifferent to the immigrant presence in the civic sphere, or who actively work to exclude immigrants from civic life. This variation is not explained by differences in institutions, socio-economic conditions, or the power interests and identities of native political actors. Why do we see such variation in incorporative activity across new destinations?

I argue that how societies settled social conflicts over demands for greater civic inclusion from native minority groups– whether ethnic, religious, or political – in the past has unintended consequences for new immigrants and political incorporation in the present. In places where minority demands for greater inclusion were accommodated, institutions were changed to be more open to minority participation, and activist groups not only gained political experience but become powerful political insiders over time. Later, when immigration emerges as a social and political phenomenon, not only may these newcomers have access to civic life through the 'inclusive institutions' originally adopted to address the civic exclusion of native minorities, minority activist groups may serve as political advocates and allies for newcomers. Therefore, the impact of past social conflict on present incorporative activity is two-fold: conflict may not only lead to the creation of minority-friendly inclusive institutions, but the experience of fighting for those institutions gives native political actors an incentive to repurpose them for 'new' minority groups, namely immigrants. In this way, the legacy of social conflict among natives in 'new destinations' may, quite unwittingly, lead to the development

of the kinds of institutions, political allies, and social narratives that facilitate political incorporation in 'old destinations'.

However, when minority demands were ignored or - worse yet - actively quashed, there was little to no institutional evolution, and minority activist groups remained politically weak. Subsequently, with new immigration, there are neither the institutional entry points nor the mobilized partners on the ground to help channel new arrivals into the political arena. Even when migrant-friendly inclusive institutions or migrant-serving organizations are established in response to immigration, a lack of politically vested native constituencies leaves them vulnerable to political cuts and retrenchment. Therefore, inclusive institutions are a necessary but not sufficient condition for incorporative activity: it is the interaction between institutions and native constituencies that creates – and perhaps more importantly, *maintains* – political space for new immigrants. These findings suggest, counter-intuitively, that those societies with a legacy of deep social conflict may be better equipped to deal with the political incorporation of new immigrants than their more stable counterparts: if the grievances of previously marginalized native minorities were addressed through the establishment of more inclusive civic institutions, there can be unintended positive spillover benefits for 'new' minorities down the line – namely, immigrants.

This chapter builds the argument in five sections. In Section I, I explore how and why institutions matter for civic inclusion. Drawing from both the literatures on institutional change and social movements, in Section II I explain how the

process of changing these institutions can affect both the formal 'rules of the game' that govern civic life, and the informal rules as well. Section III demonstrates how this legacy of conflict also shapes the willingness and capacity of native political actors to take on the task of incorporation. In Section IV, I briefly discuss the limitations of institutional reform through bureaucratic channels, and Section V walks through some of the limitations and implications of the argument.

I. Institutions and Inclusion

Civic institutions are the 'rules of the game' that govern state-society relations. These rules can be formal or informal. Helmke and Levitsky offer a working definition for both:

> "We define informal institutions as *socially shared rules, usually unwritten, that are created, communicated, and enforced outside of officially sanctioned channels.* By contrast, *formal* institutions are rules and procedures that are created, communicated, and enforced through channels widely accepted as official" (2004: 727).

Formal institutions can shape both political interactions and political outcomes: the laws that shape who is allowed to vote (Bauböck 2005), the way votes are tallied (Lijphart 1999), districts are constituted (Hero 1992; Cameron et. al. 1996; Brunell 2006), political candidates are selected (Pennings and Hazan 2001), and public resources are directed (Campbell 2003; Bloemraad 2005). They also can affect the way that the political interests and aspirations of the population are counted and considered.

Informal institutions can also shape state-society relations because the 'unwritten' rules about the social status of groups can have an effect on the responsiveness of political actors to their issues and concerns. For example, the ascribed status of minority groups – whether caste, race, or ethnicity – can often doom them to having their preferences weighted less favorably or not at all, not only because they are a numerical minority, but because of long-standing social and cultural norms that relegate some groups to 'second-class citizens' even without explicit directives from the state. The example of indigenous people is illustrative: Nagengast & Kerney's (1990) research in Mexico found that the dominant social narrative that claimed indigenous Mixtecs preferred living in poverty as an expression of their 'culture' served to absolve both the public and the government from considering corrective action. Therefore, being considered *social* outsiders can relegate some groups to *political* outsider status as well, a status that is widely understood, even if it is not formally recognized by the state.

Taken together, formal and informal institutions can create political outsiders, those groups who, due to their small numbers or low social status, find that their political preferences are consistently under-considered and undercounted. Over time, this marginalization can both undermine the legitimacy of these institutions and threaten social order: when marginalized groups feel that there is no way to have their grievances heard through 'normal' politics, they may turn to contentious politics – namely, street protests, riots, or even violence (Piven and Cloward 1977; Tarrow 1998).

However, institutions are not fixed. When groups are disadvantaged by formal or informal institutions, corrective action is possible: governments can implement a number of safeguards in order to insure that a variety of groups have a say in political life. Many of these fall under the umbrella of what Lijphart (1999) calls 'consultative institutions': quotas or reserved seats for minority groups in parties or legislative bodies, affirmative action programs in schools and the workplace, redirection of both financial and strategic resources to under-represented groups, and/or independent monitoring and oversight requirements for state agencies can help to smooth out inequalities driven by disadvantaged social and political status. These reforms can not only strengthen the position of minority groups, but they can also strengthen faith in democratic practice: in consultative systems, electoral turnout is higher, and those who are on the losing end of elections are more satisfied with democracy than their counterparts who vote in majoritarian systems (Lijphart 1999). This final point is key. Even if minority groups cannot always get their way, they can certainly have a say – and that in and of itself is hugely significant, as it may serve to preserve the legitimacy of institutions and maintain social calm. Therefore, although civic institutions can create winners and losers, institutional reforms may not only bring political outsiders into the fold, but also can help to maintain the legitimacy of a nation's democracy in the eyes of its minority groups – even if these groups do not get their way all of the time.

II. Institutions, Social Conflict, and Change

At the point when institutions are seen as having completely failed a particular group, or have lost their legitimacy altogether, that group may seek to change them. The social movements literature suggests that this perceived failure point is key to driving reform efforts: Piven and Cloward (1977) note that "the social arrangements that are ordinarily perceived as just and immutable must come to seem both unjust and mutable" (pg. 12) in order to provoke collective action.

However, challenging the structure of existing institutions requires both recognizing the problem and offering an alternative; in other words, it requires "framing" the situation in a different way. As Zald notes, "Frames help *interpret* problems, to *define* problems for action, and *suggest* action pathways to remedy the problem" (pg. 265, italics added). Another way to think of frames is as *social narratives*. Patterson and Monroe (1998) define narratives and highlight their importance in explaining political behavior:

> [Narrative] refers to the ways in which we construct disparate facts in our own worlds and weave them together cognitively in order to make sense of our reality...Insofar as narratives affect our perceptions of political reality, which in turn affect our actions in response to or in anticipation of political events, narrative plays a critical role in the construction of political behavior. In this sense, we create and use narratives to interpret and understand the political realities around us. We do this as individuals and we do it as collective units, as nations or groups (pg. 215).

However, narratives are not just frameworks for understanding, but action: as Ganz notes, narratives give people the means "to make choices under conditions of uncertainty" (2012; 274).

That said, change not only involves crafting alternative narratives, but engaging in direct conflict with the state as well, and the more dramatic the changes put forth, and the more threatening these are to the status quo, the more resistance advocates may face. Seeking institutional change, particularly for long-marginalized groups, can be a high-risk activity, particularly if what starts as peaceful protest escalates to riots, street violence, or even civil war. If marginalized groups are successful, however, the alternative social narratives they develop and articulate become institutionalized, both formally and informally. Zald (1996) notes, "The frames of winning movements get translated into public policy and into the slogans and symbols of the general culture...Successful movements have their tactics and frames appropriated by other movements; they become exemplars providing training ground and models."

How does this tie into incorporative activity? As described in Chapter Two, the literature identifies three fundamental challenges that new destinations face when trying to incorporate new immigrants into civic life: a lack of historical narratives that legitimize migrant civic participation, a lack of migrant-friendly institutions, and a lack of migrant-serving organizations. Put differently, and paraphrasing Zald, new destinations lack 1) a framework with which to interpret and understand immigration as a civic phenomenon, locate areas of exclusion, and plan strategies of action to address exclusion, and 2) the native political actors who are willing to draw from their experiences with 'old immigration' to deal with the challenges of new immigration. Taken together, new destinations lack what Ann

Swidler would call a "repertoire", namely, a "'tool kit' of habits, skills, and styles from which people construct 'strategies of action'" (1986: 273). When it comes to migration, 'old' destinations that have experienced multiple waves of immigrants have been able to develop this tool kit over time, and under different socio-economic conditions that were often more conducive to incorporative activity than those that exist in today's new destinations: today's new destinations do not have large mills and factories able to absorb thousands of new immigrant workers, and new arrivals to Europe today face much steeper barriers to citizenship than European immigrants to the Americas faced a century ago.

However, in societies with a history of resolved social conflict, there *is* a "tool kit" that exists, albeit a different one. First, immigrants arrive in a situation where political institutions were designed in order to insure minority representation in civic life. These institutions may even have enforcement mechanisms that put the onus on the state to monitor and, if necessary, directly address the civic inclusion of minority groups. Therefore, societies with a legacy of past social conflict may have their own set of 'inclusive institutions'. Second, the social narratives developed during past conflicts can be used to frame – i.e., to interpret, locate, and suggest lines of action - the situation of, and the response to, the newest minority group in society: immigrants. Together, the institutional and social legacy of past conflict gives native political actors both the legal and cognitive framework to engage in incorporative activity targeting new immigrants, despite the fact that actors have

no experience dealing with migration issues, and institutions were put in place to address native minorities, not newcomers.

But what of situations where reform efforts are unsuccessful? In societies with a legacy of social conflict that resulted in failed social movements and the maintenance of the status quo, civic institutions may remain closed to minority groups. This means that the alternative social narratives that activists put forth in making their demands were not widely institutionalized, and subsequently carry no broader social or political currency and are not a point of shared meaning for natives. Therefore, while native political actors may be sympathetic to the plight of new immigrants, they are in no position to engage in incorporative activities, as, arguably, they are not themselves incorporated into political life. Without the 1) adaptation of alternative, more inclusive social narratives, or 'frames', that can be repurposed for new immigrants, 2) the civic space for immigrants created by institutional reforms targeting native minority groups, and 3) the empowerment of formerly marginalized groups through successfully gaining access to civic participation, we would expect to see limited, at best, incorporative activity.

III. Native Political Actors and Social Conflict

However, the presence of inclusive institutions and social narratives designed to deal with old social conflicts among natives does not necessarily mean that native actors will choose to utilize them in order to benefit new immigrants. Why would native political actors choose to 'repurpose' institutions and narratives in order to

include new immigrants in civic life? The answer: social conflict that results in change not only has an effect on institutions and narratives, but it also has an effect on the actors that pushed for and benefited from these changes.

First, policy changes are recognized as not only changing institutions, but changing "social groups and their political goals and capabilities" (Skocpol 1993:58). Because institutions channel resources and structure interactions – in other words, shape power dynamics – the redistribution of government resources and attention can affect both the political standing and interests of targeted groups. In effect, institutions can create their own constituencies. For example, in her work on social policy in the United States, Andrea Campbell found that the establishment of the Social Security program increased senior citizen interest in politics: once the material well being of seniors as a group became tied to policy, that group became determined to protect this new institutional setup from retrenchment (2003).

Second, engagement in social conflict, and in particular, engagement in high-risk activism can also affect future political behavior. Here the work of Doug McAdam (1990) is illustrative: in his study of young college students who applied to participate in the 1964 Freedom Riders campaign in Mississippi, political work that was extremely risky given the violence and volatility of the time, Adams found that those applicants who did go on to participate were, in the long term, more likely to be directly engaged in political activism than their counterparts who applied, were accepted, but did not actually join the campaign.

Taken together, we can understand why native political actors may willingly take on the task of incorporation. First, native actors have the means – i.e. a "toolkit" - to do so: civic institutions that were the result of past social conflicts are open to immigrants, and the legacy of conflict gives them a framework that they can repurpose in order to apply to newcomers. Goffman calls this process "keying", namely applying one framework to another situation in order to make sense of it (1974:44). However, these formerly marginalized native actors may also have the *incentive* to repurpose these institutions: their experience with marginalization, their experience with political activism, and their interest in maintaining minority-friendly institutions can all drive native actors to engage in incorporative activities targeting new immigrants. By moving to repurpose institutions in order to include immigrants, native actors may not only be acting out of a sense of shared experience, but out of self-interest: by extending the remit of existing institutions, native actors are also expanding their constituencies, and thereby increasing the likelihood that attempts to cut or roll back inclusive institutions will face a broader pool of opposition.

IV. Institutional Change Without Social Conflict?

In new destination countries where social conflict is neither a recent nor relevant phenomenon, faced with new immigration, can institutions be changed to be more inclusive? Certainly policymakers hope so; the establishment of consultative institutions and organizations is seen as a critical component of the

integration process by both international benchmarking bodies like the Migration International Policy Index (MIPEX) in the European Union, and among community activists and political officials across many immigrant-receiving countries.

The problem with these kinds of bureaucratic changes is, they do not have the transformative effect on both informal institutions and native political actors that institutions that are the result of social conflict do. Institutional change by bureaucratic means may be less painful politically, but it does not force a broader political and social debate about minority exclusion or the effect of institutions on different groups – i.e. there is no challenge to the dominant social narrative around civic exclusion and political marginalization. As these institutional changes do not come about via mobilization and agitation, there may also not be a native political interest in their design, their outcomes – or even their existence. This lack of a native constituency can leave new migrant-serving institutions vulnerable to retrenchment: with new immigrants either completely absent from or new to civic life, and few to no native political allies, migrant-serving institutions created through bureaucratic channels (rather than direct conflict), may be easy targets for cutbacks – or elimination altogether.

The only possible alternative to this outcome may be temporal: if inclusive institutions are established bureaucratically in order to help facilitate the incorporation of new immigrants, this may, per Skocpol's argument about the transformative power of policy change, provide enough motivation and support to immigrant communities that they become able to fend off retrenchment. The

question is, can these 'new constituencies' emerge quickly enough, and have enough political strength, to maintain new institutions? Thus far, the answer seems to be "no": immigrant organizations have been unable to defend institutions that were newly created to specifically address migration issues. Where these migrant-targeting institutions have survived has been where they have included both migrant an native organizations, thus broadening the interest constituency in maintaining their existence.

Ultimately, it is difficult to see how changing formal institutions through bureaucratic means, without a broader change to the *informal* institutions (namely the social narratives that help people interpret and understand the current situation with migration) or the distribution of resources, will lead to incorporative activity on the part of native actors. This seems especially true if these new institutions are designed to primarily benefit new immigrant populations: there will be no native constituency that can emerge over time, because the constituency for the institutions may be limited. Therefore, those societies with a history of social conflict may actually be better positioned than their more tranquil counterparts to take on the task of political incorporation – this despite well-meaning activists, politicians, and bureaucrats who want to facilitate the development of what they see as migrant-specific inclusive institutions with a minimum of fuss or fighting.

We can also consider the implications for incorporative activity in a new destination if there is a history of past social conflict, but no institutional change. Would we expect to see incorporative activity from native actors then? What

happens if demands are made, but ultimately are ignored or squashed? While institutions may remain stable, Zald argues that failed social movements "provide networks of affiliation and reservoirs of experience drawn on by later movements with loose similarities" (1996:271). Marginalized groups, through the failed process of making demands, may still face exclusion, but they do have access to a network of other groups who may also remain excluded from civic life. However, as these groups are not really incorporated into political life themselves, they are not in the best position to take on the task of incorporating new immigrants.

V. Discussion

By focusing on both formal and informal institutions, and the interaction between institutions and native minority groups, I offer a theory for why we do actually see political incorporation in new destinations, even when we may not expect to. I argue that the key to understanding variation in incorporative activity targeting immigrants in new destinations in the present is due to how these countries have dealt with social conflicts around the marginalization of native minority groups in the past.

I make this argument, however, with several caveats. First, the analysis focuses primarily on the behavior of native political elites, rather than mass publics. This may seem troubling to some, because elite views on immigration may differ significantly from those of the greater public. However, in the case of new destinations, I think that focusing on elites is appropriate: political elites play a

central role in repeating and reinforcing social narratives (Chong and Druckman 2007) and in new destinations where there is no prior historical narrative around immigration to draw from, this is extremely important.

Second, I am not arguing that societies with a legacy of deep social conflict are necessarily going to provide a warmer and fuzzier migration experience for new immigrants. While political elites may call for inclusion, day-to-day street interactions between natives and new immigrants may be tense, or even confrontational; elite level tolerance does not necessarily mean that there is no street-level racism or xenophobia. In fact, a recent study of immigration and social conflict in Europe finds that the more capacity that immigrants have to engage in local politics and the more responsive elected officials are to immigrant communities, the more natives begin to turn on immigrants, as they come to be seen as competition for scarce resources (Dancygier 2010). That said, having elites who publicly support immigrants, or who come out and condemn racist and xenophobic activities, can send an important signal to immigrant communities, and, as noted, these signals do have value.

Finally, I acknowledge that there may be an additional temporal aspect to my argument: at what point are social conflicts so buried in the past that their institutional legacies no longer carry significant meaning for either native minority groups or society at large? Past social conflict may operate in a fashion similar to Weber's ([1930] 2005) description of the Protestant ethic: in the same way that the institutions of modern capitalism survive despite the death of the original 'spirit of

Christian asceticism', inclusive institutions may persist while the social narratives that they are founded on, and that give them legitimacy, fade away. Whether this fading away takes place over a generation, or over the centuries, is unclear, but if societies have inclusive institutions without engaged, vested constituencies or legitimizing social narratives, it is plausible that these too may be subject to retrenchment.[49]

Given that politicians are so desperate to avoid social conflict, the argument that past social conflict may contribute to present incorporative activity may seem quite counter-intuitive. However, when we take into account the role of institutions in shaping the distribution of power and resources, the importance of social narratives in legitimizing the civic inclusion of marginalized groups, and the roots of the motivation that drives native political actors to repurpose these institutions and narratives in order to benefit newcomers, we can see how the process of engaging in and resolving social conflict can orient 'new destination' societies in a way that appears to be quite similar to 'old destinations'. Without the institutional and social legacies of past social conflict to draw from, new destination societies may find themselves with a very limited toolkit from which to build and sustain incorporative activities targeting new immigrant communities.

---

[49] Here I am thinking of the Dutch pillarization system, which was originally created to preserve social harmony in a society divided by social and religious spheres, but that collapsed in the second half of the twentieth century. The final vestiges of this system were, ironically, struck down in the face of Muslim immigration: a system that was once seen as contributing to social order came to be seen as contributing to it, as 'protected' spheres came to be seen as isolating and ill-suited to a modern multi-cultural society.

Chapter 4 - Old Nation, New Nationals: Political Incorporation in the Republic of Ireland

-- But do you know what a nation means? says John Wyse.

-- Yes, says Bloom.

-- What is it? says John Wyse.

-- A nation? says Bloom. A nation is the same people living in the same place.

-- By God, then, says Ned, laughing, if that's so I'm a nation for I'm living in the same place for the past five years.

So of course everyone had a laugh at Bloom and says he, trying to muck out of it:

-- Or also living in different places.

-- That covers my case, says Joe.

-- What is your nation if I may ask, says the citizen.

-- Ireland, says Bloom. I was born here. Ireland.

- Excerpt from <u>Ulysses</u> by James Joyce

The question of what constitutes the Irish 'nation' is one that has bedeviled the island for centuries. Are the Irish those who live in Ireland? Those who were born on the island? Irish speakers? Can the nation be joined, or can one only be Irish by virtue of one's lineage? Can one have a British passport, or be Protestant (or in the case of Joyce's protagonist, Leopold Bloom, Jewish), and still be Irish? And, perhaps most importantly for Ireland's modern political history, to what extent should the boundaries of the Irish state reflect the presence of the 'imagined community' of the Irish nation?

The attempts to answer these questions through both constitutional means and armed violence have held broad implications for the development of Ireland's political institutions, national identity, state-society relations, and even

demographics. But what nobody could have known was that these historical battles and compromises fought out over the course of the twentieth century would bear heavily on Ireland's ability to come to terms with its new, surprising twenty-first century identity as a country of immigration.

Even thirty years ago, the idea that Ireland would someday become an island of mass immigration would be seen as laughable, as extraordinarily high levels of emigration have been the norm for most of the last 150 years. Between 1841 and 1861 the island lost close to a third of its population to famine, disease, and emigration, and for decades afterwards, mass emigration acted as a social, political and economic safety valve for this poor, tumultuous country that had one of Europe's highest birthrates.[50] But as the Irish economy stabilized and then took off in the early 1990s – a phenomenon known globally as the 'Celtic Tiger'- the country of emigrants became a country of immigrants, and by the mid-2000s, Ireland's foreign-born population rivaled that of its neighbors.[51]

This rapid influx of newcomers led to concerns familiar in neighboring countries: would – could? – new immigrants become a part of civic life? More specifically, would Ireland's native political actors take on the task of political incorporation? Despite the fact that it had no historical narrative of migration to draw from, nor were there pre-existing organizations and institutions set up specifically to help immigrants incorporate into civic life, Ireland, perhaps more than any other new destination country, seemed well positioned to welcome its new

---

[50] By 2011, after over a decade of mass migration, Ireland's population still had not recovered to its 1841 level.

[51] By this, I mean foreign-born as a percentage of the population.

immigrants. First, in 1998, birthright citizenship was enshrined in the constitution as part of the post-Troubles political reforms, putting Ireland on par with the United States, a nation built on immigration, for its naturalization policies. This meant that unlike many of her neighbors, Ireland would not have a second generation of immigrants without access to citizenship and all associated political rights – a clear recipe for social unrest. Second, unusual among most democracies, Ireland had universal non-citizen voting rights for local elections, meaning that there were few institutional barriers to entry for immigrant electoral participation – and for their mobilization by native political actors. Finally, the economic context of migration in Ireland was extremely favorable: from the mid-1990s until the economic crash of the late 2000s – i.e. the main period of immigration – unemployment was at a record low, and Ireland's rate of growth was one of the highest in Europe. New immigrants were not competing with natives for jobs, but rather, they were filling new jobs created as the economy expanded. Given these parameters, we would expect that the booming economy would dampen potential native complaints about migrant workers – and lessen the impetus to enact restrictive legislation targeting immigrants.

Yet despite all of these institutional and economic advantages, incorporative activity on the part of native political actors, and the major parties in particular, has been uneven. Strategic partnerships between native and immigrant organizations have been, at times, fruitful but usually unstable, and funding limited. Electoral incorporation has improved somewhat, but has been neither

universal nor have ties between parties and immigrant groups been sustained. Most dramatically, access to birthright citizenship for the children of immigrants was ended via referendum in 2004, an effort that was led by the parties in government. Therefore, despite its open civic institutions, strong economy, and an immigrant population that was neither culturally distant nor disinterested in politics, incorporative activity in Ireland has been sporadic and limited - at best - on the part of native political actors. While political parties drove much of the (in)action around incorporative activity, incorporative efforts have been limited and relatively ineffectual on the part of unions as well. To their credit, native community organizations have been trying very hard to build stronger links between immigrant and political organizations - often with the assistance of local bureaucrats – but because many of these groups depend on government funding for their support, despite the best of intentions, incorporative activity has waxed and waned with the fortunes of both the economy and key actors in the government.

Why, despite the seemingly favorable conditions, have so many Irish political actors seen fit to leave immigrants at the margins of civic life? First Ireland's civic institutions can be misleading. Ireland's surprisingly open electoral and citizenship institutions were not developed to accommodate new immigrants. Rather they were put in place as part of the process behind settling the 'national question', namely, separation and independence from Great Britain. Therefore, when these institutions came under pressure from new immigration, they had relatively few native political actors who were willing or able to defend them from retrenchment.

In addition, there was no predominant social or historical narrative that most native actors could draw from in order to justify their existence. This was especially obvious during the debate over birthright citizenship: unlike a country like the United States where political actors can look to a long history of migration and *jus soli* citizenship as part of our civic fabric, in Ireland, these kinds of narratives do not exist. Finally, while new immigrants did have some emergent native political allies, these efforts at outreach were swamped by Ireland's broader culture of political clientelism and populism. In Ireland, the unwritten rules of political interaction – the importance of face-to-face contact, social networks, and personal relationships – are more important than the formal rules, which is largely why, at first glance, Ireland seems so well-primed for incorporative activity, but the reality of the situation is far different. In Ireland's case, informal institutions and political expediency take precedence over both formal institutions and political ideology; subsequently, what looked like an ideal situation from afar turns into quite a difficult environment for incorporative activity upon closer inspection.

Taken together, the Irish case offers several key lessons. First, open civic institutions are not enough to facilitate incorporative activity on their own, and in order to be sustainable over time, they need political allies who both care about their existence and are willing to fight in order to maintain them. Second, ideology and political identity are not enough for us to be able to make predictions about incorporative activity: even actors that look to the same political traditions may react quite differently when it comes to political incorporation. Finally, while they

may have the best of intentions, local bureaucrats may not be able to compensate for a lack of interest in incorporative activity from more explicitly partisan groups: while bureaucracies do have some autonomy, at the end of the day, they are both accountable to elected officials and, like civic institutions, vulnerable to budget cuts, reorganizing, and retrenchment.

This chapter is structured as follows. Section one explains how the competing visions for Ireland's political status as a nation-state led to the development of open civic institutions, but a very closed political and social narrative of the Irish nation that was later codified in the 1937 constitution of the republic. Section two shows that even with the new constitution as a guide, the national question repeatedly raised its head, and the Irish government had to re-evaluate both its internal and external relationships, leading to the development of surprisingly open civic institutions. Section three traces the rise of immigration in the 1990s, and the reaction of native political actors. Section four briefly explores alternative explanations for Ireland's lack of incorporative activity, and introduces the case of Northern Ireland, which is the focus of Chapter 5.

I. Defining the Irish Nation

Ireland began the 20th century as a multi-national entity that was part of the United Kingdom. Political battles – and increasingly street battles - over 'the national question', namely, Ireland's political status vis-à-vis the UK, led to the partition of the island into a twenty-six county, Catholic-majority, independent Irish Free State and a six-county Protestant-majority province, Northern Ireland,

that remained part of the UK. The newly created Free State, despite now being relatively homogeneous, inherited the British-era political institutions that were designed to maximize the representation of diverse political views among a heterogeneous population. However, a split amongst Irish nationalists over the terms of independence led to a realignment of both the emerging party system and Irish civil society, and a more closed, restricted vision of a Gaelic, Catholic Ireland became the dominant political and social narrative on the island. With constitutional reform in 1937, this vision became codified into law. Therefore, the new Irish state emerged with both citizenship and electoral institutions that were designed to be pluralistic and friendly to minority groups – foreigners in particular - but a dominant social and political narrative that set very 'bright' boundaries of the Irish nation as an 'imagined community'.

Defining the 'imagined community'

The "Irish Question", namely, the nature of Ireland's political and economic relationship with the United Kingdom, has long presented a challenge to the British (and later, the Irish) government. While under British jurisdiction, one political strategy that emerged in the attempts to control the largely Catholic island was to populate it with a less restive population. Starting in the 17th century, waves of Protestants, including Presbyterians from Scotland, were granted land in Ireland, particularly in the Northern province of Ulster, where the long-powerful Gaelic clans were stripped of their holdings. With this resettlement, relatively

homogeneous Ireland became a multi-cultural entity along sectarian lines.

Cleavages between religious groups were deepened by the Penal Laws, which restricted Catholic and Presbyterian electoral participation, land ownership, and religious education, while favoring members of the Reformed church (Church of Ireland). Tensions between these groups accelerated during the 1700s with the emergence of rural secret societies organized along religious lines: groups such as the Whiteboys, Peep O'Day Boys, and the Catholic Defenders were organized to both protect isolated communities against sectarian violence and to punish landlords and other authority figures who were seen as greedy and usurious. Notably, the formation of secret societies in order to address both state-led repression and sectarian violence, is a phenomenon that would occur repeatedly in Irish politics for the next three centuries.

While skirmishes on the island escalated, events beyond Ireland began to influence how local actors saw their situation. Most significantly, Irishmen dissatisfied with British rule found a new model for state-society relations in the ideals of the French Revolution, and that country's attempts to establish a secular republic. Inspired (and aided) by the French, in 1798 the United Irishmen launched the first major uprising with the express intent of establishing an independent, Irish republic. Interestingly, this rebellion was a multicultural affair: the United Irishmen was founded by Protestants, and one of the key leaders of the rebellion, Theobald Wolfe Tone, became known as one of the founding fathers of Irish republicanism – and he was Protestant as well.

Although this uprising failed, it served as the catalyst for institutional change. In 1801, the British Parliament passed the Acts of Union, which redefined the relationship between Ireland and Great Britain. The Irish Parliament was abolished, and Ireland was instead allocated a number of seats in the British Parliament, thus shifting both political control and the battle over the island's status from Dublin to London. This shift did little to sooth an increasingly restive population, however, and Ireland experienced a series of conflicts and contentious social movements over the next century whose demands grew increasingly strident and nationalist.[52]

Home Rule

The lack of Irish control over Irish political affairs was a point of contention across the island. The question remained, however: to what degree should Ireland establish her autonomy, and by what means? While some favored autonomy within the UK, others wanted full independence. While some were willing to accept terms for independence that would leave Ireland as part of the Commonwealth with the British monarch as the head of state, others wanted to break completely with both Britain and monarchy in order to establish a republic. And while some who favored independence wanted to pursue it through constitutional means (namely, legislation in the British Parliament), others were willing to take up arms in order to establish

---

[52] The major social movements of the 19th and early 20th century can be split into three key eras: 1) the Catholic emancipation movement in the 1820s, which led to an end of the ban on Catholics serving in Parliament, 2) the Home Rule movement in the late 1800s, which sought the devolution of power back to Dublin (but kept Ireland as part of the UK), and, 3) the push for independence in the 1910s and 20s.

an independent Ireland. This final tension, between 'constitutional' and 'physical force' approaches to meet political ends is one that would have dire, bloody consequences for the entire island of Ireland for much of the twentieth century.

The competing claims over Ireland's political status resulted in the growth of competing political parties and organizations. The Irish Parliamentary Party (IPP), pushed for Home Rule, meaning that while Ireland would remain part of the UK, it would have its own Parliament, and would control its own affairs in all areas but foreign relations. On the other side of the political divide, the predominately Protestant Ulster Unionist Party (UUP) emerged in response to the IPP, as many Protestants, and in particular Ulster Protestants, were deeply opposed to Home Rule. Fearful of being a minority in an independent, Catholic Ireland, "Home Rule is Rome Rule" was a constant refrain; indeed, the fears of what this would mean for unionists led to the creation of the Ulster Covenant, a pledge to resist Home Rule drafted by unionist leaders in 1912, and subsequently signed by over 470,000 people. Interestingly, this feeling was not universal among Protestants: the foremost leader of the Home Rule movement and the Irish Parliamentary Party in the late 1800s, Charles Stewart Parnell, was, like Wolfe Tone, a Protestant.

The IPP dominated political discourse around the 'national question' from the 1880s until the early 1900s, when it began losing ground to the resurgent republican movement. Republicans rejected home rule and sought to leave the UK completely: not only did they want an independent Irish state, but they wanted to break with the Commonwealth (and subsequently, the monarchy) in order to

establish a republic. Sinn Féin ("We, ourselves") was founded in 1907 as an amalgamation of various organizations, and positioned itself as the main party of Irish republicanism. Inspired by rising nationalist movements abroad, the party's founder, Arthur Griffith, looked not to the British Parliament for a solution to the 'Irish problem', but further east, to the struggles of tiny Hungary to free itself from the Austro-Hungarian Empire. In 1918, just before the pivotal Parliamentary elections, he wrote:

> Fifty-seven years ago the London "Times," writing of the struggle then waging, said of the Hungarians –
>
> > *They wish to be Hungarians, and not Germans, and they have no desire to be dragged by Austria into German politics and be compelled to spend their money and lives in pursuit of objects in which they have no interest.*
>
> This is to-day the position of the people of Ireland. They wish to be Irish, and not English, and they have no desire to be dragged by England into British politics and be compelled to spend their money and their lives in pursuit of objects in which they have no interest (1918, xii).

Griffith was not the first republican to look abroad for inspiration: Wolfe Tone and the United Irishmen were not only inspired by the French republicans of the 18th century, but they even used France as a base to launch the 1798 uprising. However, Griffith's use of the Hungarian case to both frame and pose a solution to the 'Irish problem' – in other words, using the situation of another struggling, disenfranchised group to highlight the struggles of the Irish people - is notable, for this is a tactic that would be powerfully deployed by Irish republicans time and time again, particularly in Northern Ireland.

Parties were not the only groups emerging to take a position on the 'national question' during this era: paramilitary organizations grew in strength and support as well.[53] The Ulster Volunteer Force (UVF), the Irish Volunteers, the Irish Republican Brotherhood (IRB) and the Irish Republican Army (IRA) all saw the use of violence as legitimate in pursuit of their political goals, whether maintaining political union with Britain, as in the case of the UVF, or establishing an independent Irish republic (the position of the IRB and the IRA). Foreshadowing what would be a lasting issue in twentieth-century Irish politics, there were close ties between paramilitary organizations and political parties: Edward Carson, the founder of the UVF, was a member of the British Parliament and a leader of the Ulster Unionist Party, and on the other side, many members of the IRB and IRA became members of Sinn Féin as well.

Finally, the rising nationalism of the 19th and early 20th century not only manifested itself through political life, but through the establishment of social and cultural institutions as well. The Gaelic Athletic Association (GAA), which featured Irish sports such as hurling and Gaelic football (as opposed to 'foreign' sports such as soccer and rugby), the Abbey Theater, featuring works by Irish playwrights, and the revival of the Irish language through groups such as the Gaelic League all contributed in their own way to furthering the demands for an Ireland free of

---

[53] Even before the late 19th and early 20th century battles over the 'national question,' Ireland had a well-established history of secret societies that were willing to use intimidation and violence to meet their objectives.

British control.[54] Many of these groups had close ties to leaders in the republican movement; for example, Eamon de Valera, now considered one of the founding fathers of the modern Irish state, was active in the Gaelic League, the IRB, the IRA and Sinn Féin.

These tensions boiled over in 1916 with the Easter Rising, when republican rebels seized several buildings and outposts in Dublin and declared the "Irish Republic as a Sovereign Independent State". Patrick Pearse, a member of the Irish Republican Brotherhood read a proclamation in front of the General Post Office in Dublin, declaring Ireland to be an independent republic. Although he drew only a few curious glances, the text of the Proclamation was quite radical, not just due to its declaration of independence, but for its focus on equality (it was specifically addressed to "Irishmen and Irishwomen") and civil liberties:

> The Republic guarantees religious and civil liberty, equal rights and equal opportunities to all its citizens, and declares its resolve to pursue the happiness and prosperity of the whole nation and of all its parts, cherishing all the children of the nation equally, and oblivious of the differences carefully fostered by an alien government, which have divided a minority from the majority in the past.

Although the rebellion did not receive widespread support and was quickly put down by the British Army, public opinion began to shift in favor of republicanism, and Sinn Féin went on to win a majority of the Irish seats – 73 out of 105 - in the 1918 Parliamentary elections. However, although they won the seats, they did not *take* the seats: this abstentionist policy, which still holds today, was because republicans saw the British Parliament as the unlawful arbiter of Irish

---

[54] Indeed, the GAA banned the use of the national stadium, Croke Park, for the playing of "foreign games" until 2005.

political life and as a distraction from the formation of a distinctly Irish political identity.[55] Instead, Sinn Féin announced that they were forming their own Irish parliamentary body, Dáil Éireann, and they, not the Parliament, were the lawful representatives of the Irish people.

Alarmed by the under-representation of Unionists in local government and the rise of Sinn Féin as the dominant political force on the island, the British government passed the Local Government (Ireland) Act in 1919. This act changed voting procedures in Ireland, switching from a majoritarian voting system to a system of proportional representation. Under the old 'majority rules' approach, in the 1918 elections, unionists outside of Ulster were only able to win one seat in the House of Commons, despite the fact that they had over double-digit support in parts of Dublin and Cork. With the specter of Home Rule looming, southern Unionists feared that they would be forever excluded from political life under the existing electoral rules. Proportional representation would ensure that unionist representation in local government at least somewhat reflected unionist support among local voters. In legislative debates over the issue (a debate that Sinn Féin did not participate in, due to their policy of abstentionism), Lieutenant-Colonel Guinness made explicit reference to the effect that proportional representation would have on minority rights:

> In Ireland we want to give representation to the ratepayers, who in many cases have not had their interests property considered, and we are quite convinced, judging by the Sligo experience [Sligo experimented with proportional representation several

---

[55] Sinn Féin's abstentionist policy is another example of the influence that the Hungarian nationalist movement had on early 20th century republicanism, and Arthur Griffith in particular.

years prior], that we shall get a far more just representation of minorities under proportional representation than under the present system.[56]

However, it is difficult to separate anxiety about being a political minority from the anxiety over being a political minority in a system where republicanism dominated. Guinness went on to note that:

> The Nationalist organization in the South has for many years monopolised representation, and this fact will be aggravated, as against Unionist opinion, very much in the future, because it is well known that Mr. John Redmond exercised a very strong influence in favor of toleration in local politics – an influence which is in no way accepted by his Sinn Féin successors.[57]

Finally, in 1920, the 'Irish question' came to a head. Ulster unionists flatly rejected both Home Rule and independence, while republicans were unwilling to accept anything except independence at that point. The compromise: Ireland would become an independent member of the commonwealth with the British monarch as the Head of State, but residents of the six-counties designated as Northern Ireland in the Home Rule legislation would vote on whether or not they wanted to join the newly created Irish Free State or remain part of the United Kingdom. The 'decision' to opt-out, however, was a *fait accompli*: it would not be made on an all-Ireland basis, but would rather be left to the potential citizens of Northern Ireland – an entity whose boundaries were drawn to ensure a unionist majority, and would therefore guarantee that the vote for partition would be affirmative.

The resolution of the Irish question became even more contentious when the terms of the Anglo-Irish Treaty, which granted Irish independence, became known in the South. To the horror of many republicans, because Ireland would remain

---

[56] 114 Parl. Deb., H.C. (5th ser.) (1919) 99-183.
[57] Ibid.

part of the British Commonwealth, upon taking office, legislators would be required to take an oath to the King. This, along with partition, was anathema to hardline republicans in Sinn Féin, but despite their objections both the British Parliament and the Dáil (the new Irish parliamentary body), approved the treaty. With that, the party system atomized: the 'anti-treaty' faction of Sinn Féin, led by Eamon De Valera, walked out of the Dáil, and many took up arms against the new Irish state, launching the short but bloody Irish Civil War. The 'pro-treaty' faction of the Republican movement, while fending off attacks from anti-treaty forces, set about establishing the new institutions of the Irish state.

Institutionalizing the Imagined Community: Conflict and Constitutional Reform (1922-1937)

Irish independence has been often described as a process of simply painting the mailboxes green: there was a surprising degree of institutional continuity pre and post.[58] However, the reforms of the era did in many ways reflect the aspirations and concerns that were the key drivers of the push for independence. They also reflected many of the logistical and demographic issues created by partition, an issue that would continue to bedevil both the British and Irish governments for most of the twentieth century.

With the partition of the island, the new twenty-six county Irish Free State was far more homogeneous: whereas the 1911 census that included all of Ireland's

---

[58] As a point of explanation: the old Royal Mail boxes were red. However, this assessment is not without merit: Articles 75 and 77 of the 1922 constitution essentially grandfathered in both the old court system and all public officials.

32 counties found that 24% of the Irish population was Protestant, by 1921, this figure had dropped to 7% for the newly created Free State (CSO 1926). Nevertheless, there was still a strong unionist political presence in and around Dublin, and South Dublin in particular, home to many of the Anglo-Irish elite. This left the government to deal with two fundamental questions: in a newly created state where people held different national identities, how would citizenship be defined, and how could membership in the polity be determined? Subsequently, many of the clauses in the new constitution around issues of citizenship and civic participation were clearly written with an eye towards both the remaining Anglo-Irish population and the 'lost' nationalist population in the North. Article 3 of the Constitution of the Irish Free State (1922) granted citizenship to anyone who:

> ...at the time of the coming into operation of this Constitution, who was born in Ireland or either of whose parents was born in Ireland or who has been ordinarily resident in the area of the jurisdiction of the Irish Free State (Saorstát Éireann) for not less than seven years, is a citizen of the Irish Free State (Saorstát Éireann).[59]

However, in a nod to the segment of the population that identified politically with Great Britain, Article 3 also gives people who were in the state at the time of its creation the right to not accept Irish citizenship.

The new constitution not only addressed the concerns with being a multinational state, but also reflected many of the demands and concerns voiced over the last century of rising nationalism. Asserting the primacy of Gaelic culture, Irish was established as the national language, although English is also acknowledged (Article 4). In addition, the protection of freedom of conscience and

---

[59] Article 3.

religious expression and education (Article 8) were a reaction to centuries of anti-Catholic discrimination. Finally, in a bid to curb paramilitarism and extrajudicial activity on the part of groups like the IRA, the constitution gave the newly formed *Oireachtas* (Parliament) the 'exclusive right' to organize and maintain state security forces (Article 46).

The 1922 Constitution and the subsequent administrative decisions were primarily the work of the pro-treaty forces that remained in government, now organized into a new party, Cumann na nGaedheal ("Society of the Gaels"). However, after several years in the political wilderness, anti-treaty forces began to reorganize themselves, and in 1926, De Valera and other former members of Sinn Féin formed Fianna Fáil ('Soldiers of Destiny'). De Valera laid out Fianna Fáil's key initiatives in his first address to the party, namely, removing the loyalty oath from the constitution, unifying republicanism, and improving the economic condition of the population. Beyond the specifics grievances of the anti-treaty side, however, he also seemed to lay out the party's approach to policy and voter outreach:

> The duty of Republicans, to my mind is clear. They must do their part to secure common action by getting into a position along the most likely line of the nation's advance. If you want to know what the direction of that line of advance at the moment is, ask yourselves what line a young man would be likely to take – a young man, let us say, with strong national feelings, honest and courageous, but without set prejudices or any commitments of his past to hamper him – who aimed solely at serving the national cause and bringing it to a successful issue.[60]

---

[60] De Valera, Eamon, "Address to the Inaugural Meeting of Fianna Fáil," La Scala Theatre, Dublin, (May 16, 1926).

What is noticeable here is that there is a complete lack of policy – instead, party members are asked to divine where voters want to go, not where they want to take voters. This would also emerge to be one of the key critiques of modern Irish party politics, and Fianna Fáil in particular: parties were indistinguishable in terms of policy or where they belonged on the political spectrum. Bereft of traditional left-right ideology, the primary mechanisms for organizing politics were therefore populism and nationalism.

Dubbing themselves 'the Republican Party', Fianna Fáil contested elections in 1927, and five years later won enough seats to form their first government. With that victory, De Valera was well positioned to re-orient Ireland's political and legal institutions, and the main vehicle through which he established his vision for Irish society was through a new constitution, known as *Bunreacht na hÉireann* (heretofore referred to as 'BnE' or ' the Constitution'). This constitution differed from its 1922 counterpart in several notable aspects. First, in a rebuff to partition, Article 2 laid claim to the entire island, not just the twenty-six designated as independent. This did not go over well with unionists. In addition, citizenship was no longer explicitly granted through birthright in the constitution; rather, Article 9 gave the power to make citizenship laws to the legislature. It did, however, maintain access to citizenship for anyone born on any part of the island (north or south) prior to the enactment of the constitution. Finally, De Valera's constitution was much more specific than the 1922 version when it came to social policy, and included sections on the family and religion. These were contentious in some

quarters: Article 41 made mention of the special role of women 'in the home', and in another move that would not endear Fianna Fáil to Protestant unionists, Article 44 explicitly recognized the "special position of the "Holy Catholic Apostolic and Roman Church as the guardian of the Faith". While it went on to acknowledge other faith communities, including the Church of Ireland and Presbyterians, many Protestants – and progressive republicans - were unhappy about the precedence given to Catholicism, while some hardline Catholics were unhappy that Roman Catholicism was not officially named the state religion in the constitution.

It is notable that many republicans were opposed to De Valera's constitution, for he was the republican leader who rejected the Anglo-Irish treaty – and the democratically elected Dáil – precisely because they were seen as incongruent with republican values. Yet De Valera's objection to the Anglo-Irish treaty for being 'insufficiently republican' is the very criticism that was leveled at his constitution: it departed from the liberal, egalitarian ethos espoused by the 1916 Proclamation, and was instead a conservative, religious, and overtly nationalist document. If nothing else, the tensions around the 1937 Constitution highlighted the clear points of divergence within the Church of Republicanism. While some preached adherence to a more liberal vision of the modern Irish Republic, others who identified as republicans held a more nationalist, ethno-centric ideal of civic and national life. Given that differentiated treatment of the Irish by the British state was largely due to ethno-cultural differences, and this differentiated treatment is what fueled both the Gaelic cultural revival and the political mobilization of the late nineteenth and

early twentieth centuries, it is not surprising that it is hard to separate republicanism and ethno-nationalism.

Bunreacht na hÉireann was put to a referendum and was approved by 56% of voters. Yet despite these changes, some aspects of Irish political life remained the same. Most important were the electoral institutions. As described in the previous section, in 1919 the British ended the plurality voting system (also known as 'winner take all' or 'first-past-the-post', hence 'FPTP') whereby whoever collected the most votes for a district won that seat, and replaced it with a system of proportional representation (PR), whereby within a given district, votes would be allocated to parties based on the percentage of the overall votes they received. This system not only remained in place after independence and with the new constitution (Article 16), but was extended to national elections as well. The new constitution also guaranteed multi-member electoral districts: each constituency would have at least three representatives.

The fact that Ireland maintained a PR system is critical to its political development over the twentieth century because differences in political outcomes between a FPTP/single member district and a PR/multi-member district are stark. First, per Duverger's Law, FPTP simply require a plurality: whoever gets the most votes wins. This institution tends to produce two-party political systems, for small parties have little hope of ever gaining a majority of votes. The UK and the United States are prime examples.[61] On the other hand, since under PR, parties can gain a

---

[61] The recent success of the UK's Liberal Party notwithstanding.

number of seats in direct proportion to the votes they receive, the system tends to encourage the formation of multiple parties, including smaller niche parties that can sometimes tip the balance of power in a legislature and may therefore play an outside role in agenda setting.[62]

To observe the practical implications of this theory, consider the case of the Irish Labour Party in Dublin versus the UK Labour Party in London. In a district in North Dublin, Labour garners 40% support in polling ahead of the election, and in a district in North London, UK Labour also garners 40% polling support. Under Irish voting laws, this district has multiple members – let's say five – so if Labour has the support of 40% of voters, they are likely to win 40% of the five available seats – so two seats. Under the UK system, our fictitious North London district only has one representative, so there is only one available seat. Voters cast their ballots, and while the Labour candidate wins 40% of the votes, they lose the seat to the Conservative candidate, who wins 60% of the votes. Therefore, UK Labour will never have representation in that North London district, whereas in our North Dublin district Irish Labour will have representatives in the legislature – despite the fact that they did not win a majority of votes. Looking at our districts, you can also see why Ireland has experienced the rise and fall of a number of small parties over the years while the UK has not: under proportional representation, even

---

[62] One notable example of a system where PR gives disproportionate power to small parties is Spain. While the two main left-wing and center-right parties dominate, regional parties from the Basque Country and Catalonia have a presence in the national legislature as well, and because the two large parties do not usually have enough seats to form a government on their own, they often need to team up with a regional party, which then trades its support in return for greater concessions on regional autonomy.

winning as few as five or ten percent of votes can allow for small parties such as the

Greens or the Liberals to gain seats in a legislative body. The inclusion of a wider

swathe of political parties (and hence viewpoints) is why political scientists have

highlighted PR systems as being optimal for diverse societies (Lijphart 1999):

minority political interests may not always win elections outright, but they can still

be included in government, and it is the lack of inclusion that is at the root

contentious politics in diverse societies.

However, making things more complicated, Ireland also introduced the

single-transferrable vote system (STV), whereby voters rank candidates on the

ballot according to their preference, and those preferences are then tallied and

distributed across candidates. Therefore, under a PR-STV system, multiple small

parties can flourish, but because voters give preferences to individual candidates, it

is also relatively friendly to independent candidates as well: people interested in

running for office do not have to do so under the auspices (or constraints) of a

political party. Combined, PR-STV sets few formal barriers to electoral

engagement, whether on behalf of upstart political parties or motivated individuals,

and on the flipside, voters facing multiple options are likely to find candidates who

represent their views – and if not, they can throw their hat into the ring themselves

without much difficulty.

Taken together, the 1937 constitution had two interesting, and competing

undercurrents that could affect state-society relations. On the one hand, as

described above, the electoral institutions put into place were created to optimize

the number of viewpoints that could emerge and be represented in parliamentary politics. Combined with universal suffrage, Ireland's electoral institutions represented what Dahl calls "polyarchy", namely an electoral regime that is "highly inclusive and extensively open to public contestation" (1971, 8). But on the other hand, on questions of identity and social policy, the constitution seems more closed: while the references to the Irish language were not surprising, the preeminence of the Catholic Church, the nods to "morality" in the regulation of individual behavior, and the highlighting of women's role in the home, rather than in public life, set off some alarm bells, not just among the Anglo-Irish but even among more liberal republicans as well. Taken together, the constitution was expansive in its approach to electoral institutions yet restrictive in its views of national identity and social policy – and these tensions would have long-term ramifications for both the ongoing Irish nation-building project and how Irish political actors – and parties in particular – would respond to immigration.[63]

---

[63] Indeed, these tensions were often stoked by cultural representations of 'Irishness' even within republican-aligned cultural institutions. Arthur Griffith, the founder of Sinn Féin, famously led protests against J.M. Synge's play *The Playboy of the Western World* for being both indecent and insufficiently political. The play painted a rather unflattering portrait of the rural Irish, who were fetishized by some nationalists as the embodiment of national virtues. Ironically, *Playboy* was staged at the national theater in Dublin, which was co-founded by W.B. Yeats specifically to feature the work of Irish artists. Although Yeats supported the republican movement – indeed, some of his most famous works were inspired by this period in Irish history – he despaired of the militant ethnocentrism of some republican leaders and the public. The conflict between the idealized narrative of the noble Irish and literary critiques of Irish politics and culture surfaced again in 1926 after the Abbey debut of Sean O'Casey's *The Plough and the Stars*: the unflattering portrayal of some participants in the 1916 Easter Rising and the depiction of politically indifferent Dubliners sparked shouts and hissing from the audience, prompting a now-elderly Yeats, mindful of the *Playboy* riots, to reportedly leap onto stage and shout in response, "You have disgraced yourselves again! Is this going to be a reoccurring celebration of Irish genius?" (Miller 1972

II.   Re-setting the boundaries of the Nation (1937-1998)

Eamon DeValera's 1937 constitution was a declaration of both the nature and

boundaries of the Irish nation. However, Ireland would be forced to re-consider

these issues over the course of the 20th century. Poverty at home drove high levels

of emigration well into the 1980s, and the dispersion of Irish people around the

world helped to reframe the narrative of the Irish nation as one that looked to the

bonds of blood and history to determine membership. Yet at the same time, conflict

in the North forced the Irish government to reassess the relationship between the

boundaries of the state and the nation on territorial grounds. Therefore, in the

period between the institutionalization of the principles laid out in Dev's

constitution, and the onset of mass migration, Ireland expanded its access to both

jus soli and *jus sanguinis* citizenship.

At the same time Ireland had to reassess the laws of legal citizenship, it also

had to reconsider the laws of political citizenship, namely the rules and regulations

that determined membership in the polity and state-society relations.

Independence and partition did not end ties with Britain: thousands of British

citizens still lived in Ireland after independence and at a time when land rights

partially determined electoral rights, widespread British land ownership and

intermarriage between British and Irish citizens made determining who had a right

to vote an administrative headache for local officials.

---

quoted in Yale University Modernism Lab, available online at:
http://modernism.research.yale.edu/wiki/index.php/The_Plough_and_the_Stars.)

Finally, the Irish government had to reassess their socio-economic policies. While self-sufficiency and economic development were key priorities of De Valera's brand of republicanism, Ireland's persistently high emigration rates served as a visible rejoinder to the government's social and economic policies. Starting in the 1950s, generational turnover amongst political elites meant that new leadership increasingly looked to the European common market abroad and reform at home to stabilize both the economy and the population. Yet cycles of tepid growth and severe recession were common into the 1980s, forcing a complete restructuring of both fiscal policy and state-society relations. Wary of the strife in neighboring Britain over Thatcher's economic and labor reforms, the Irish government instead chose a consultative approach, giving unions, and later NGOs access to the policymaking process through 'social partnership', a tripartite bargaining regime involving negotiations between the government (led by the Office of the Taoiseach), the main employer's association, the Irish Business and Employers Confederation (IBEC), and the Irish Congress of Trade Unions (ICTU), with additional consultation from community organization and farmer's groups.

These changes along multiple fronts meant that, despite no history of immigration – indeed, the high levels of emigration during this period would make mass immigration almost unthinkable – and a post-partition population that was extraordinarily homogeneous, by the late 1990s, Ireland had, quite by accident, some of the most minority-friendly civic institutions in the world. Birthright citizenship and non-citizen local voting rights meant that immigrants and their

children had greater access to political membership than the majority of their

counterparts in Western Europe – or in most Western democracies, for that matter.

Ireland's system of social partnership institutionalized an inclusive model of state-

society relations that even included the voluntary sector (the non-profit sector), and

at the time was heralded as a model "third way" between Thatcherism and

Scandinavian-style corporatism. Collectively, Ireland's electoral and civic

institutions were what Lijphart (1999) calls *consultative*, ideally designed to allow

multiple actors access, and to allow even small minority groups to have their voices

heard and weighted in public affairs. This is the situation that confronted new

immigrants when they began arriving en masse in the 1990s – and this situation is

also why the response of natives to that arrival would seem so surprising.

Defining the Nation

Since the foundation of the Irish state, citizenship rights have been part of

the Irish constitution and codified in law. The 1937 Constitution shifted the issue of

citizenship to the legislature, noting, "The future acquisition and loss of Irish

nationality and citizenship shall be determined in accordance with law". This

meant that, despite the changes of 1937, the Irish Nationality and Citizenship Act

of 1935 was the law of the land. Article 2(1)(b) of the act notes that:

> "The following persons shall be natural-born citizens of Saorstát Éireann, that
> is to say:
> (*a*) every person who was born in Saorstát Éireann on or after the 6th day of
> December, 1922, and before the date of the passing of this Act, and
> (*b*) every person who is born in Saorstát Éireann on or after the date of the
> passing of this Act,

The Act also allowed for children whose births were registered in Northern Ireland to have access to citizenship, although they were required to make a statement of intent to maintain their citizenship when they became twenty-one.

The next major change to the law came in 1956 with an updated Irish Nationality and Citizenship Act that explicitly proclaimed "Every person born in Ireland is an Irish citizen from birth".[64] Despite these subtle changes in the wording of citizenship regulations, there were two constants: access to Irish citizenship for people born in Northern Ireland – which the Irish government claimed under Article 2 of the 1937 constitution[65] - and access to Irish citizenship for the children of Irish people living abroad – a clear nod to the centrality of emigration in Irish political and social life.

The issue of citizenship returned to the political agenda however, due to the escalating conflict in the North. In 1969, the region collapsed into a bloody sectarian conflict that came to be known as the Troubles. At stake were two key issues that had remained contentious since partition: the role of Catholics in electoral politics and civil society, and Northern Ireland's political status vis-à-vis the UK and the Republic. Put somewhat differently, Northern Ireland was a multi-national statelet that had yet to come to an agreement between nationalists and unionists over 1) how these different groups could engage in local politics and 2)

---

[64] Irish Nationality and Citizenship Act, 1956, No. 26 (1956), II.6(1).
[65] Specifically, the original version of the constitution read: "The national territory consists of the whole island of Ireland, its islands and the territorial seas" (Article 2).

how changes could be made to Northern Ireland's political status vis-à-vis Great Britain without resorting to violence.

Because republicans on both sides of the border wanted to see Northern Ireland reunited with Ireland, any resolution to the conflict necessitated the involvement of the Irish government and concessions in Irish law. Yet Article 2 of the 1937 constitution refused to recognize British claims to Northern Ireland, instead affirming, "The national territory consists of the whole island of Ireland, its islands and the territorial seas". This was a major sticking point in the peace process: unionists felt threatened by Ireland's claims over what they saw as 'their' territory. Ultimately, negotiators reached a compromise: the Republic would remove its claim to the entire island from its constitution (pleasing Unionists), but it would insert a clause that would guarantee that anyone born anywhere on the island had the right to join the Irish nation via citizenship – even if they were born north of the border (thereby pleasing Nationalists). Subsequently, as part of the peace process, Article 2 was stripped from the constitution, and a new clause was added, guaranteeing birthright citizenship for anyone born on either side of the border:

> It is the entitlement and birthright of every person born in the island of Ireland, which includes its islands and seas, to be part of the Irish nation. That is also the entitlement of all persons otherwise qualified in accordance with law to be citizens of Ireland. Furthermore, the Irish nation cherishes its special affinity with people of Irish ancestry living abroad who share its cultural identity and heritage.

What is interesting about the new Article 2 is that it manages to be both a statement of *jus soli* and *jus sanguinis* citizenship: it acknowledges membership through both place of birth and blood. In addition, whereas before citizenship

matters were determined via legislation, with the new GFA clause – a change that over 90% of voters approved of – it was now enshrined in the constitution, which could only be changed with a public referendum, not by politicians. Unlike citizenship policies in settler states, however, this change had nothing to do with immigration; rather, they were the result of the ongoing political debate over the 'national question'. And any concerns about what this constitutional change would mean for potential future immigration were trumped by broader concerns that the delicate peace process should not be sidetracked or potentially derailed by introducing a debate about immigration into what was already a contentious negotiation.

Defining the Electorate

Beyond the question of legal citizenship was the issue of political citizenship: who could participate in civic life, and under what terms? This question became increasingly urgent at the local level because of the complicated rules governing eligibility to participate in local elections including calculations about property taxes, marriage, and occupancy.

Subsequently, in the early 1960s, debate over eligibility for local elections reached the Oireachtas, where it was proposed that local voting rights simply be based on residency, rather than citizenship. The government's position was put forth by the Minister for Local Government in a Committee on Finance hearing held as the law was being written:

In the case of local elections, it is proposed to allow every person aged 21 years or more who normally resides or occupies property in the area of a local authority to be registered there as a local government elector, irrespective of whether or not he is an Irish citizen. At present a person who is not an Irish citizen can be registered as a local government elector only if he has occupied property in the area of a local authority for six months, or is the wife of such an occupier, and is a British subject. The number of non-citizens who will receive the local government franchise as a result of the proposal will be small, *but considerable simplifications in registration procedures will result from the change* [italics added].[66]

These comments suggest that the law was made universal for administrative purposes, rather than any desire to incorporate the small non-British foreign-born population that existed in Ireland at the time. The new electoral rules went into effect under the Electoral Act of 1963, whereby anyone over the age of 21 who was a regular resident or had six months residency was declared eligible to register to vote in local elections, regardless of their citizenship status.[67]

The Economy and Civil Society

Ireland's feeble economy also forced a re-think of both internal and external state-society relations over time. First, the weak labor market plus high birth rates insured that Ireland had one of Europe's highest rates of emigration, long into the post-war period, a source of shame for many people who felt that the country should be able to provide for its own.[68] Second, high unemployment and the weak economy

---

[66] The exact statute can be found on the Oireachtas website at:
http://debates.oireachtas.ie/dail/1963/02/27/00058.asp.
[67] Electoral Act, 1963, Number 19, (1963), 5(2)a.
[68] Many, but not all. During an interview with Newsweek magazine in the 1980s, Fianna Fáil minister Brian Lenihan, in response to a question on the emigration issue reportedly responded, "Sure, we can't all live on a small island".

were also a source of political tension for those who stayed, and by the 1980s,

strikes and protests were increasingly common.

In 1943, Eamon De Valera, then the Taoiseach (prime minister) of Ireland,

gave a radio address that came to be known as "The Ireland That We Dreamed Of"

speech.

> The ideal Ireland that we would have, the Ireland that we dreamed of, would be the home of a people who valued material wealth only as a basis for right living, of a people who, satisfied with frugal comfort, devoted their leisure to the things of the spirit – a land whose countryside would be bright with cosy homesteads, whose fields and villages would be joyous with the sounds of industry, with the romping of sturdy children, the contest of athletic youths and the laughter of happy maidens, whose firesides would be forums for the wisdom of serene old age. The home, in short, of a people living the life that God desires that men should live. (quoted from Coogan 1966, 72)

However, by the 1950s, this dream of a rural, happy, God-fearing Ireland had

become a nightmare. Ireland's autarkic economic policies, high birthrate, and lack

of industry spelled economic disaster: over half a million people emigrated over the

decade, close to 16% of the population (Glynn 2012). Other Fianna Fáil ministers

recognized that for a small, agricultural country to survive economically, it needed a

better strategy than exporting workers. With De Valera's retirement from the office

of Taoiseach and the appointment of Seán Lemass, Ireland began the first in a

series of policy changes meant to reorient the economy outward. In 1959, tariffs

were abolished, and tax breaks were offered to foreign companies looking to invest

in Ireland. In the 1960s, Ireland improved its economic relations with Britain, and

in the 1970s, it joined the European Economic Community (EEC).

By the 1980s, however, the economy was back in free fall again: the unemployment rate reached 17%, and industrial action paralyzed the country. Interestingly, neighboring Britain was undergoing similar upheaval at the time: a high unemployment rate and faltering heavy industry lead to massive worker strikes across the country. In Britain, the solution was Thatcherism: the government refused to negotiate with the unions, and broke the back of the labor movement. Ireland, however, tried a different approach: in an arrangement that came to be known as "social partnership", the country established a tripartite bargaining structure that allowed for the government (through the Office of the Taoiseach), the employers association IBEC, and key worker organizations (the main trade union federation ICTU and several farmers' associations) to sit down and negotiate social policy and wages every three years. Over time, this arrangement also included a "fourth" leg of civic associations who weighed in on social policy. The core organizing principle of the model was to create a deliberative institution where key stakeholders could collectively address not only wage concerns but economic policy as well, and as it developed, social partnership came to be seen as an alternative to Thatcherite politics (Roche 2007; Baccaro and Lim 2007).[69]

The cooperation and wage moderation fostered by the social partnership agreements not only promoted greater cooperation between key Irish interest groups, but also facilitated Ireland's entry into both the European Union and the

---

[69] The deliberative nature of social partnership has been called into question; see Teague 2006; Donaghey 2008.

euro zone. In 1992, Ireland signed the Maastricht Treaty, and thus began laying the economic and policy groundwork to attempt to qualify for the euro. In the mid-1990s, Ireland met the necessary benchmarks for euro zone membership, and in 1999 it officially adopted the single currency. However, with the signing of the Maastricht Treaty, Ireland also committed itself to European citizenship, namely the free movement of citizens of member states to other states. This freedom of movement included full access to the Irish labor market for any EU citizen, a clause that, perhaps more than any other, would have unforeseen consequences for immigration.

Conclusion

Between the signing of Bunreacht na hÉireann in 1937 and the Good Friday Agreement of 1998, Ireland underwent a series of social, economic, and political changes that few could have foreseen: unprecedented economic growth due in large part to Ireland's openness to foreign investment, peace in Northern Ireland, and an emergent 'third way' model of industrial relations all served as key indicators of Ireland's progression from an agrarian, nationalistic, inwards-looking society to a modern European state. Yet despite these advances, there were still deep and unresolved inconsistencies in Irish political life. The most critical was on the issue of citizenship. The 1998 constitutional amendment to the citizenship laws was quite liberal in that allowed for both birth and blood-based access to citizenship (jus soli and jus sanguinis), but its establishment had little to do with institutionalizing

a consciously expansionist and inclusive view of citizenship and nationhood. Rather it was a new, more politically acceptable way to make an old claim: that the island of Ireland was for the Irish, so despite the creation of the border, anyone on the island had access to membership in the nation. Therefore, in the case of Ireland's 'liberal' citizenship regulations, there was a strongly nationalist historical narrative that underpinned what was a seemingly open policy.

III. New nationals, new problems (1998 – 2010)

With the signing of the Good Friday Agreement, and the successful constitutional referendum to reform citizenship law, Ireland had, so it thought, defined and encoded in law a twenty-first century vision of the Irish nation. Few could have suspected that over the next decade the country would be forced to reopen this question of 'what is the nation' – not due to conflict in the North, but rather due to immigration. Fewer still would have predicted, given the nature and context of that migration and the openness of Ireland's civic institutions, that the answer to that question would be so restricted.

The consultative nature of Ireland's political institutions might lead us to expect significant incorporative activity: Ireland's electoral institutions and its approach to social policy were designed to maximize inclusion. Yet we see the opposite across a number of measures. Native political actors sought to close the pathway to citizenship for Irish-born children of immigrants. While there was party outreach to migrant candidates, their migrant voter mobilization was relatively

limited. And strategic partnerships between native political actors and migrant organizations were often limited and unstable. Attempts by local bureaucrats to compensate for the lack of incorporative activity from party officials had some success, and helped build networks among migrant-led organizations, but funding issues and high staff turnover plagued the entire bureaucratic infrastructure implemented in order to deal with immigration. Therefore, while the attempts at bureaucratic incorporation were at times heroic, these efforts were also necessarily limited by both the remit of local government and by the fact that funding was still controlled by elected officials at the national level.

New migration

In 1996, two years before the Good Friday Agreement was signed, immigration in Ireland was still primarily a British affair: while 7.5% of the population was foreign-born, only 2.1% of the population was foreign-born and not born in the UK. This is a key distinction, for many of the UK-born 'immigrants' living in Ireland self-identify as Irish, not British nationals. This is in part due to how the Irish census asks about nationality. Question 5 asks about where the respondent's mother lived when they were born, but Question 6 asks the respondent to self-identify their nationality, and according to the census data for UK-born immigrants, there is a significant gap between the two: the number of self-reported

UK nationals is far below the number of UK-born immigrants.[70] Given the freedom

of movement between Ireland and the UK, this gap is likely attributable to the

children of either Irish migrant workers in England or of nationalists in Northern

Ireland now living in the Republic, a population that would not be considered

immigrants socially or politically.[71] Although this position seems somewhat ironic

given the tortured relationship between Britain and Ireland over the last several

centuries over these very issues of citizenship and nationhood, it is also

understandable given not only the fluidity of movement between the two countries,

but their shared language, history, and to some extent, even popular culture.[72]

As the unemployment rate fell in the 1990s, and foreign investment and

economic activity increased, Ireland began to beckon to those beyond its extensive

diaspora. Between 1996 and 2001, the non-UK foreign-born population more than

doubled from 2.1% to 4.7%, and by 2006, it stood at 8.2%.[73] The overall foreign-born

rate rose over the same period from 7.5% to 11.4% to just under 15% by 2006. This

put the relative size of Ireland's foreign-born population ahead of that in the UK

---

[70] In 2006, 271,781 respondents reported that they were born in the UK, but only 112,548 reported having UK nationality, meaning that over half of the UK- born 'immigrants' in Ireland do not identify as UK nationals.

[71] Two key clues that even many self-reported UK nationals are of likely Irish descent is the fact that almost half of the children spoke Irish and close to half reported their religious affiliation as Roman Catholic (CSO 2008).

[72] Despite the fact that Irish is the first official language, the majority of the Irish population speaks English as a first language. In addition, some aspects of British popular culture are ubiquitous in Ireland, including support for Premier League football and the wild popularity of reality television shows like X-Factor and Britain's Got Talent.

[73] These years were chosen as they follow the Irish census cycle, which is on the years ending in one and six for every decade.

(10.1% foreign born in 2006) – an amazing turnaround for a country that long relied on Britain to absorb its excess labor (OECD 2010).

Ireland's decade of mass migration can be split into two periods however: pre and post 2004. That was the year that the European Union added ten new member states: Poland, Latvia, Lithuania, Estonia, Czech Republic, Slovakia, Slovenia, Hungary, Malta, and Cyprus. Of these, only Malta and Cyprus were given full labor market rights within the EU; the other so-called 'A8' countries of Central and Eastern Europe would instead be gradually absorbed into Western Europe, as each existing EU member state was allowed to defer labor market entry to A8 workers for up to seven years. Of the original member states (the EU-15), only Ireland, the UK, and Sweden gave A8 workers immediate access to their labor markets. At the time, the Irish and British governments estimated that relatively few Eastern Europeans would move to the British Isles: in media reports, the British government estimated that around 15,000 A8-country workers would move to the UK (BBC 2006), and Dáil transcripts from Ireland make clear that the public officials who pushed for greater integration with Europe did not think that this would have any real effect on immigration. Drawing on Ireland's experience, then Minister for Finance, Brian Cowen, stated:

> ...I want to deal with the issue that somehow we might become swamped by unwanted immigrants descending on our shores. Most of the immigrants in Ireland today are here because the economy needs them. Their skills and energies contribute to wealth creation and, in the main, they provide for themselves...
>
> The suggestion that huge numbers of unwanted and unneeded people will come in does not stand up. Let us look at the facts. When Ireland joined the European Union in 1973 and, later with the advent of the Single European Act, the Maastricht Treaty and the Amsterdam Treaty, large numbers of emigrants did not leave our

shores for Germany, France, Italy and other countries. We had emigration, but it was to traditional markets – English speaking countries such as Britain and the United States. Often this was illegal but there were cultural and familial reasons for it. The same will prevail in central and eastern Europe. Ireland no longer has an emigration problem. Most of our citizens can now be employed at home.[74]

However, with the opening of the Irish labor market to Central and Eastern Europeans, between 2002 and 2011 the Polish population alone rose from 2,124 to 120,461, an increase of 5,671% (CSO 2012). Latvians and Lithuanians were not far behind; collectively their population increased from less than 4,000 to over 53,000 over the same time period. Given that the total population of Ireland was less than four million people at the time, this was a particularly dramatic shift.

By 2006, key characteristics of the Irish foreign-born population were emerging, and were outlined in a 2008 report by the Central Statistics Office (CSO). First, migration was primarily an urban phenomenon: 76% of immigrants lived in cities and urban areas, compared to 58.4% of natives. The immigrant population was also much younger than the native population, not surprising given the majority of inflows were migrant laborers of prime working age. The most striking difference between natives and newcomers however is in education levels: while around 40% of the native population had a college degree, over half of all immigrants from outside of the EU and close to 75% of all immigrants from Western Europe (not including Ireland and the UK) were college educated.[75]

---

[74] 554, Dáil Éireann (2002) 118-20.
[75] Education data is for the 15-44 year old age bracket only. Of the main immigrant groups, Eastern Europeans were less educated than natives.

There were also key labor market differences between natives and newcomers. Overall, immigrants were more likely than natives to work in the 'hotels and restaurants' and construction industries. Among immigrant groups, EU-15 immigrants are overrepresented in "business activities", while non-European immigrants are overrepresented in health and social work: 20.8% of non-EU migrants work in this sector, versus 10.8% of natives; many of the latter group work as doctors and nurses in the Health Service Executive (the HSE, Ireland's national health care service).

Taken together, the characteristics of Ireland's foreign-born population combined with Ireland's political institutions would lead one to expect if not mass incorporative activity, at least minimal political resistance to political incorporation. Unlike countries like the Netherlands, Belgium, or Turkey, Ireland did not have a significant Muslim immigrant population – and Muslim immigration has been a key point of conflict in most migrant-receiving states on the Continent, both for cultural and economic reasons (Zolberg and Woon 1999; Hirsi Ali 2008; Joppke 2009; Caldwell 2009). Most Irish immigrant groups were Christian and economically active, and the non-white, non-European migrant population consisted of highly skilled professionals. Given Ireland's economic situation, immigrant pool, and open civic institutions, it is hard to imagine a more optimal situation for political (and economic and social) incorporation. So what happened?

Citizenship

The first great challenge to political incorporation arose over the issue of citizenship. After the passage of the 1998 constitutional amendment as part of the Northern Ireland peace process, few would have anticipated that the issue would be back on the political agenda less than a decade later. However, by 2003, the pressures of migration led some to question the wisdom of a jus soli citizenship policy. First, over the course of the 1990s, the number of asylum seekers in Ireland arriving annually increased dramatically, rising from only 39 in 1992 to just under 12,000 in 2002 (Office of the Refugee Applications Commissioner 2001; 2004). This uptick was extremely controversial: some claims emerged both in political debate and in the popular press that many asylum seekers in Ireland were actually failed asylum seekers or those immigrants unable to gain access to citizenship from other European countries, while others claimed that Ireland's asylum seekers were lured to Ireland by 'soft-touch' immigration enforcement and birthright citizenship which, with the expansion of the European Union, meant EU citizenship and all of the rights of residency and access to the labor market that this entailed.

The citizenship issue became the focus of sharpened political debate, however, due to legal cases involving what some characterized as "citizenship shopping". The most visible case was one that was actually brought in the UK: acting on legal advice, a Chinese national, Man Chen, traveled to Belfast to give birth to her second child in order to both circumvent China's 'One Child' policy and, according to court documents, obtain Irish citizenship for her child which would

then allow her to settle wherever she wished in the European Union.[76] When she

tried to settle in the UK, the British government denied the residency application,

and the case went to the Court of Justice of the European Union, which found in

favor of Mrs. Chen and her daughter Catherine. The court noted that as a citizen of

the European Union, Catherine had a right to stay, but as she was a minor, her

mother should have a right to stay as well in order to ensure that Catherine could

live as a EU citizen.

In the spring of 2004, the Minister of Justice for the Fianna Fáil government,

Michael McDowell, announced that the government would be seeking to hold a

constitutional referendum in order to end the birthright citizenship clause in Article

2. McDowell's role in the citizenship debate was an interesting one: as the Minister

in charge of these matters, he was expected to be the mouthpiece of the government

in both Dáil debates and in the press. However, McDowell was a member of the

Progressive Democrats (PDs), a small party that went into government with Fianna

Fáil at various points in the 1980s, 90s, and 2000s. The PDs were known for both

their neo-liberal economic policies and their relatively liberal social policies. The

party was founded by former Fianna Fáil and Fine Gael politicians who disagreed

with the civil war parties' conservative positions on issues such as contraception

and divorce. They also believed strongly in a low-tax, light-touch regulatory

infrastructure: former party leader Mary Harney famously noted in a 2000 speech

to the American Bar Association that "Geographically we are closer to Berlin than

---

[76] Kunquian Catherine Zhu and Man Lavette Chen v. Secretary of State for the Home
Department, (2004) European Court of Justice C-200/02.

Boston. Spiritually we are probably a lot closer to Boston than Berlin".[77] Yet despite

their liberalism on social matters, the party was also known for not being

particularly open to foreigners: until 2003, only citizens of Ireland or EU states

could join the party – despite the fact that non-EU citizens were able to vote in local

elections.

The official government proposal, released in April 2004, listed several

reasons for the proposed change. First, the government sought to shift the power to

make citizenship policy to the legislature, rather than being bound by the

constitution. Second, it wanted to stop situations like the Chen case, whereby

people:

> ...with no other claim to be present in the European Union and no substantial
> connection with Ireland are arranging their affairs so as to ensure the birth of a
> child in Ireland in order that it will acquire this status and these rights, with an eye
> to increasing the chances of the parents of securing for themselves, by association
> with the EU national child, some claim to be able to remain within Ireland or the
> wider EU territory or some rights within that territory.[78]

Opposition parties attacked the government's position on procedural,

political, and ethical grounds. Fine Gael, the largest opposition party, took issue

with the way that the government was handling the logistics – and in particular,

the consultative phase – of the referendum and the party leader, Enda Kenny,

raised his concerns in the Dáil:

---

[77] Mary Harney, "Remarks by Tánaiste, Mary Harney at a Meeting of the American Bar
Association in the Law Society of Ireland", Blackhill Place, Dublin, July 21 2000.
[78] Irish Naturalization and Immigration Service, *CITIZENSHIP REFERENDUM: The
Government's Proposals*, (April 2004), Available online at:
http://www.inis.gov.ie/en/INIS/Govtproposals.pdf/Files/Govtproposals.pdf.

The government announced yesterday that it intends to hold a referendum on citizenship on 11 June. I recognize there is a problem of non-national persons arriving here, particularly late in pregnancy, and I understand it must be resolved. I have already committed Fine Gael to working constructively towards a solution of that problem. However, we can only do that if the Government enters into consultation on the basis of good faith. The Government's record to date does not instill confidence or belief in that.[79]

Officials from both Fine Gael and the Labour Party attacked the government for using the citizenship referendum as an electioneering tactic.

The Tánaiste (Deputy Prime Minister): The Government has decided that since there will be an election and people will be voting on 11 June, it is the appropriate time to put this matter to the people and let them decide.

Mr. Allen (Fine Gael): The Government wants to win votes. It is all about votes.

Mr. Rabbitte (Labour): Despite our political differences I have always regarded the Tánaiste as a decent person in politics and an honourable colleague in the constituency. It makes my stomach sick to see her lend her party as cover to Fianna Fáil in a transparent ploy to exploit the immigration issue in an election atmosphere.

Deputies: Hear, hear.[80]

Labour also questioned the government's assertions that women with late-term pregnancies were swamping maternity offices just to give birth in Ireland – as several legislators pointed out, the Minister drew on figures that represented all non-national women, without drawing distinctions between new arrivals and women who had arrived as part of the overall wave of migration. Given that the immigrant population was disproportionately young and of working age, this meant that the female immigrant population was also disproportionately of childbearing age, and an increase in the number of immigrant women in maternity hospitals was

[79] Dáil Éireann, Leader's Questions, vol. 53, No. 4, 7 April 2004.
[80] Dáil Éireann, Leader's Questions, vol. 53, No. 4, 7 April 2004 (815-17).

not necessarily a sign of nefarious activity, but rather an expected outcome when

there is an influx of young adult women into the country.

The government pushed back against accusations that the proposal was in

any way racist or an attempt to capitalize on the already-scheduled local elections.

When the Dáil took up debate on the issue again, Minister McDowell took pains to

argue that the issue was really about the nature of citizenship:

> Citizenship is the means whereby we become members of a moral, cultural, political, social, economic and legal community based on rights and duties established in law.
>
> Citizenship, then, is not just an entitlement to a passport with a particular symbol on its cover, although possession of a passport is undoubtedly an important attribute of entitlement to a particular citizenship. It is a complex of rights and obligations shared by people of a common nationality, and a symbol of the sovereign nature of the nation state.[81]

McDowell's characterization of citizenship in this go-round of the debate was

very much civic: people belong to a community where there are a series of rights

and obligations, and the community of the nation is bound by those shared values.

However, this position was incongruous with Ireland's broader citizenship policy,

which allowed anyone with a grandparent born in Ireland to be eligible for Irish

citizenship, without ever having set foot on Irish soil. It is telling that in the debate

over birthright citizenship, the government never suggested ending its *jus*

sanguinis policies, even beyond the context of Northern Ireland.

Dan Boyle of the Green Party, who had a unique perspective on the issue,

raised the issue of civic versus birthright citizenship: he himself was born in the

United States, and held Irish citizenship through his parents:

---

[81] Dáil Éireann, Twenty-seventh Amendment of the Constitution Bill 2004: Second State vol. 583, No. 6, 21 April 2004 (1185-1186)

153

In the proper context and in an appropriate environment a debate on citizenship would be very welcome – a debate on the nature of what it means to be a Irish citizen, what it means to be a citizen in a republic, what are the rights that being an Irish citizen confers upon an individual and, more important, what are the responsibilities that individual citizens have to act collectively to bring about the best possible society here. That is not the debate we are having. That is not the debate the Government wishes us to have. The government has zeroed in on a very narrow aspect of the citizenship debate and in so doing has exposed its own cynicism regarding how it sees Irish citizenship in the 21st century. The debate on citizenship should not only be about birthright, it should also be about heritage and residency. In trying to make ourselves seem more like Berlin than Boston on this issue, the Government has forgotten that on many aspects our citizenship laws are far from liberal, and that as regards residency, citizenship granted to people who have lived in this country for a considerable length of time depends solely on the whim of the Minister for Justice, Equality and Law Reform, whereas in other countries such citizenship is granted after a set period of residency...[82]

While all of the opposition parties were annoyed with the government's lack of consultation and seemingly dubious motives for calling the elections, Aengus Ó Snodaigh, the Sinn Féin spokesperson on Justice, Equality and Human Rights, issued a statement strongly condemning the government's position as racist and opportunist:

The proposal to grant some people the right of citizenship by birth but to remove the right of citizenship by birth from other babies with a different ethnic background is nothing less than an introduction of citizenship based on race. This goes against everything Sinn Féin has worked for in building an Ireland of Equals, and is also contrary to the Good Friday Agreement. We reject the Government's proposal as dangerously irresponsible.

...The Minister has twisted the facts to fit his ideological agenda. He knows that his proposal will inflame bigotry and poison the national atmosphere but he is prepared to do this in the hopes of electoral gain. As it stands, racism in this state has prompted a rising level of hate crime, which has already resulted in assaults and deaths. It is the height of Ministerial irresponsibility to politically exploit this issue and it once again calls into question the fitness of Michael McDowell for his post.[83]

---

[82] Dáil Éireann, Twenty-seventh Amendment of the Constitution Bill 2004: Second State (Resumed), vol. 583, No. 6, 21 April 2004.
[83] "Sinn Féin rejects proposed citizenship law," *Sinn Féin Press Release* (March 19, 2004).

Of the four main parties in government opposition, however, Sinn Féin's

opposition to the citizenship referendum is notable because it put the country's two

self-identified republican parties on different sides of a core issue: membership in

the Irish nation. Although Sinn Féin supporters are often loathe to be lumped in

with Fianna Fáil, these are the two parties in Irish politics that have the closest

historical ties to the Irish republican movement of the late 19th and early 20th

century. They also have the closest ties to physical force republicanism, namely the

willingness to take up arms against the state in pursuit of republican ideals: the

founders of Fianna Fáil were members of both the IRA and the Irish Republican

Brotherhood, and the current leaders of Sinn Féin were members of, or had close

alleged ties to the Provisional IRA, the armed paramilitary organization that was

deeply involved in the bloody chaos that spread across Northern Ireland,

particularly in the 1970s.[84] Yet there is a key difference: although it contests

elections in the Republic, and has a reliable voting base in Dublin and some of the

counties that border Northern Ireland, Sinn Féin's true power base is in the North.

The main party headquarters is along the heavily Catholic Falls Road of West

Belfast, scene of some of worst sectarian violence of the Troubles, and for many

years it was considered the political wing of the Provisional IRA in Northern

Ireland. Therefore, while Fianna Fáil's base consists of republicans who have

dominated national politics for much of the twentieth century, Sinn Féin largely –

---

[84] Sinn Féin and the IRA have undergone a number of iterations over the years, and some of
the deadliest feuds in Irish politics have been the internecine battles between republican
organizations.

but not exclusively - represents republican communities that were politically and economically marginalized from the time of partition well into the late twentieth century. Sinn Féin's focus on equality was a key component of the peace process, and the narrative of equality in their statements against the citizenship referendum are reminiscent of the broader 'equality agenda' that shapes state-society relations in post-conflict Northern Ireland.

Parties in the Dáil were not the only groups who weighed in on the debate: an array of civil society organizations, both native and migrant-led, voiced their opinions on the proposed legislation as well. One of the most vocal groups was the Immigrant Council of Ireland, which noted that the proposal would have a "profoundly negative impact" on the lives of children.[85] Opposition also came from groups involved in the Northern Ireland peace process: the Social Democratic and Labour Party (SDLP), a Northern Irish nationalist party whose leader, John Hume, won the Nobel Peace Prize for his role in both the 1960s Catholic civil rights movement and in ending the Troubles, loudly opposed the referendum as a threat to the Good Friday Agreement[86], as did Bruce Morrison, a former U.S. Congressman who not only worked on the peace process, but who helped move immigration legislation through the Congress in order to make more visas available for Irish workers.

---

[85] Immigrant Council of Ireland. 2004. "There are so many reasons to Vote NO." *electioneering pamphlet.* Available online at: http://irishelectionliterature.wordpress.com/2013/04/01/citizenship-referendum-there-are-so-many-reasons-to-vote-no-whats-yours-irish-council-for-civil-liberties/
[86] William Graham, "Nationalists concerned over referendum," *Irish News* June 9 2004.

The National Consultative Committee on Racism and Interculturalism

(NCCRI), the government-sponsored migration-monitoring agency, also issued a

statement on the proposed change.[87] Although as a non-partisan organization it did

not take a yes or no position, it noted that the increase in non-nationals at Irish

maternity hospitals "Coincided with increased migration to Ireland, mainly as a

consequence of people working, including those working in our health services"

(NCCRI 2004, 10). It also voiced concerns about the rising practice of calling non-

national maternity hospital visits 'citizenship tourism' or 'benefits tourism', calling

these terms 'derogatory' and tracing their origins to a "xenophobic and unfounded

scare campaign by British tabloids in the run up to the enlargement of the EU on 1

May 2004" (pg. 10). Finally, echoing some of the complaints in the Dáil, they noted

that there the referendum was "not being held in the optimum circumstances"

because it was concurrent with the local and European elections, thus leading to a

great deal of public confusion.

Despite these objections, the citizenship referendum had broad public support

and passed: 79.17% voted "Yes" to changing the constitution. However, the

government came under fire afterwards from the Referendum Commission, the non-

partisan agency tasked with handling the public information campaign for any

constitutional referendum.[88] The Commission's complaints echoed those of the

---

[87] The NCCRI will be discussed in detail below.
[88] The Referendum Commission has "the statutory role of explaining the subject matter of
the referendum to the electorate. In addition [in 2001] it was granted a new role of
promoting public awareness of the referendum and encouraging the electorate to vote at the
poll" (Referendum Commission 2004, 2). It issued direct mail booklets explaining the

opposition in the Dáil: the government, in its rush to link the referendum to the

local and EU elections, did not allow sufficient time for public debate and

understanding of what voters were being asked to decide on:

> It is with a certain sense of frustration that the Commission must once again record the fact that on this occasion it was not permitted ample time to run a fully comprehensive information campaign....
>
> The Commission is of the view that democracy is not well served by allowing a minimal amount of time for the electorate to consider proposals to amend the Constitution.[89]

The passage of the referendum led to the Dáil enacting legislation that laid

out the terms for naturalization. The *Irish Nationality and Citizenship Act 2004*

decreed that:

> A person born in the island of Ireland shall not be entitled to be an Irish citizen unless a parent of that person has, during the period of 4 years immediately preceding the person's birth, been resident in the island of Ireland for a period of not less than 3 years or periods the aggregate of which is not less than 3 years" (4.6A(1)).

Under this legislation, time spent in Ireland as a student or as an asylum-

seeker did not count towards residency.

Although the citizenship referendum was seen as a disaster by immigrant

communities and their supporters, there was a second result from the local elections

that was also of great interest: Portlaoise, a small community located about an hour

outside of Dublin, elected Rotimi Adebari, an immigrant from Nigeria, to the town

council. Adebari's election attracted global attention, but in Ireland it had the effect

---

referendum, ran ads on both radio and television, and set up a website, which both made the booklet available and provided detailed information on the proposals.
[89] Referendum Commission, *Report of the Referendum Commission on the Referendum of the Twenty-Seventh Amendment of the Constitution Bill (Irish Citizenship),* Dublin (2004).

of redirecting attention away from the citizenship issue towards another key concern of political incorporation: electoral politics.

Electoral Incorporation

Incorporative activity in the area of electoral politics in Ireland has been a mixed bag. The fact that all non-citizen adults are allowed to vote in local elections might lead one to expect that, at a minimum, parties that are seeking to gain power would try to register new immigrant voters, for as a relatively unorganized constituency, they could provide a boost in support to parties or even individuals looking to make an impact on city or county government (Dahl [1974] 2005). Yet despite this potential, migrants in the 2004 local election cycle were targeted for exclusion, not inclusion: the vote for the citizenship initiative was timed to take place during the local and European elections. Not surprisingly, studies of party behavior in the 2004 elections found that none of the parties had migration or migrant-related issues as part of their platforms or party literature (Fanning et al 2004). Together, the 2004 election cycle sent a clear message to immigrant communities and their allies: political incorporation was not a priority for Irish political parties, despite supportive rhetoric about inclusion from some quarters. With that, both changing circumstances and a determined group of local officials and community organizations set out to insure that the 2009 cycle would be different.

Voters, Candidates, and the 2009 Local Elections

Mindful of both the attention and interest that Adebari drew and the rapid influx of Eastern Europeans, the 2009 election cycle saw a significant increase in incorporative activity on the part of parties. In the run-up to the elections, the *Irish Times* and other newspapers ran a series of articles with breathless titles such as "Immigrants Join in the Political Jousting" that featured migrant candidates. Indeed, party recruitment of migrant candidates in 2009 was considerably higher than in 2004, when only six immigrant candidates stood overall. In 2009, out of thirty-eight immigrant candidates, ten stood for Fianna Fáil and eight for Fine Gael.[90] Interestingly, the Green Party (which although it was in government with Fianna Fáil at the time was a minority party overall), also had eight immigrant candidates, thereby punching well above its weight in terms of migrant candidate recruitment relative to size. Labour, as the third-largest party in the state, had far fewer migrant candidates at four, and Sinn Féin, despite its advocacy on behalf of immigrant citizenship rights, had none. Notably, there were a significant number of candidates who ran as independents: twenty-one percent of immigrant candidates ran without any party affiliation at all. Of these, seven out of eight were African immigrants [Table 4.1]

Yet despite the party interest in migrant candidates, they did receive some criticism for their approach to electioneering. First, some migrant candidates

---

[90] The Irish Times reported that over forty immigrant candidates ran, but Metro Éireann, a weekly newspaper targeting the immigrant community, put together a migrant voting guide with thirty-eight candidates. Given Metro Éireann's role in the immigrant community, and the lack of official figures, I chose to use their numbers instead of the data from the Irish Times.

complained that they received limited support from the parties. Second, despite all of the interest in migrant candidates, there was relatively limited activity around the recruitment of migrant voters. Instead, the strategy on the part of parties seemed to be akin to "If we build it, they will come", namely, the presence of migrant candidates would entice migrant voters to the ballot box - and parties would ultimately benefit. One Irish candidate, running as an independent, told *Le Monde* that immigrant candidates were simply being used as "as 'sweepers', intended to bring out an immigrant vote that will transfer to the party's lead candidates, while the candidates themselves are being unfairly 'led on' by the parties to believe that they have a realistic chance".[91]

The parties did make some efforts to reach out not just to migrant candidates but potential migrant voters: between the 2007 general elections and 2009 local elections, both Fine Gael and Fianna Fáil hired immigrant outreach coordinators. However, this was not a mass voter outreach effort; rather, they played a coordination role in making contacts with different migrant organization, and overseeing the preparation and distribution of party literature and information to migrant communities. The party reps did take part in some migrant voter mobilization events organized by immigrant community groups, but not in a partisan fashion. Where the civil war parties did try to directly boost migrant voter registration and participation, their efforts seemed to be limited to Eastern Europeans, specifically Poles - despite the fact that Africans as a group showed the

---

[91] Colin Murphy, "New faces of Irish politics," *Le Monde diplomatique*, June 10, 2009, http://mondediplo.com/2009/06/10ireland.

most interest in and enthusiasm for local politics in Ireland and their votes seemed up for grabs as they were not, as a community, tied to any given political party.

Ultimately, incorporative activity by parties for the local elections was a mixed bag. On the one hand, most parties did make an effort to run immigrant candidates, and there was a notable improvement in migrant community outreach as compared to the 2004 election cycle. On the other hand, the parties still seemed to be marginally engaged in migrant voter registration and mobilization efforts. This was particularly surprising in Ireland, where party 'ground game', namely efforts to be sure eligible voters were both registered and could make it to the polls, is well developed, especially within Fianna Fáil, Fine Gael and Sinn Féin. Taken together, however, it seems that the observer who noted that migrant candidates were being used as "sweepers" may have been correct. Despite the pejorative overtone, this approach seems rational for two reasons. First, it is relatively low-risk: immigrants could potentially draw in new voters themselves and benefit other party candidates on the ballot. But in addition, as one party official noted, for smaller parties that do not have the manpower or resources of the larger parties, candidates have to rely heavily on personal networks, and particularly friends and family, in order to canvass and get voters to the polls on election day. Because Ireland is a new destination, immigrants are at a distinct disadvantage: they may not have been living in Ireland long enough to be able to leverage their social networks into a seat in government.

Ironically incorporation through immigrant candidate selection was the most limited for the two parties that were the most vocal in support of migrant citizenship rights, Sinn Féin and Labour. This is in part due to both where the support for these parties lies, and the internal culture of the parties. First, both Labour and Sinn Féin draw heavy support from voters in Dublin, and the city is a hotbed of grassroots organizing for both parties. However, Dublin also has a disproportionately high immigrant population. Because parties will generally not run more than three candidates for a given district, priority for candidate selection goes to those who have a solid, proven track record of both community and party activism. Therefore, in the case of the Labour party, immigrants interested in running for Labour in Dublin were going to be disadvantaged by the fact that the pool of potential candidates is already relatively deep, and because immigration is so new, migrants are less likely to have developed the kind of organizing record that many natives have. Ironically, this means that the areas where new immigrant candidates have a better chance of getting on the ballot are the areas where Labour has a smaller base, and are therefore less likely to get elected anyway. Sinn Féin puts an even higher premium on grassroots community activism than Labour. Therefore, it remains to be seen whether or not immigrants will be able to work themselves up the internal structures and hierarchies of these parties in time for the next round of local elections in 2014.

Bureaucrats, Voters, and the 2009 Local Elections

However, in 2009 there was another set of native actors that became involved in migrant voter registration: local government. In the wake of the 2004 and 2007 elections where immigrants received scant attention from parties, some local government officials decided that they should step in to fill the gap. Specifically, local bureaucrats in the Dublin City Council (DCC) were concerned because in their view, they were at the 'coal face' of the incorporation process (Bureaucrat #2, personal interview, Dublin, April 2010). First, as noted, migration in Ireland is a disproportionately urban phenomenon. In addition, DCC bureaucrats were painfully aware that native-immigrant conflicts were behind a series of urban race riots in England in the 1980s (a period when Irish emigration levels to the UK were quite high). More recently, the 2005 Parisian riots were in the back of their minds, and they did not want to see similar social unrest in Dublin. In the view of DCC officials, migrant voter mobilization would be an important step towards incorporating new immigrants into civic life.

Just as DCC officials were becoming interested in taking up the task of incorporation, migrant-led civil society groups were proliferating. Among the non-European groups that migrated to Ireland before 2004, (most notably Nigerians), many were heavily involved in migrant community organizing. Some of this heightened activity was a reaction to the 2004 citizenship referendum: for Africans in particular, getting involved in politics was a way to gain a more visible place in a society that seemed increasingly determined to exclude them. However, the elevation of Rotimi Adebari to the position of Lord Mayor of Portlaoise heightened

African immigrant community interest in electoral politics: Adebari was the first

black mayor in Irish history. The "Irish Obama" made political inclusion seem like

a real possibility – a welcome message after the harshness of the citizenship

referendum debate. With the opening of Ireland's labor market to the new Eastern

European EU member states in 2004, the number of migrant organizations surged

again as these new immigrants not only formed their own organizations, but

became deeply involved with the Catholic Church, the first port of call for many

Polish workers bewildered by Irish society.

The DCC's involvement in political incorporation was also facilitated by a

completely unrelated political event: the Polish national elections. The political

organization of the Polish community in Ireland, the largest single immigrant group

after British citizens, was hastened by events at home: for the 2007 Polish national

elections, the conservative and increasingly nationalist Law and Justice Party, led

by Jaroslaw Kaczynski, faced a stiff challenge from the pro-European Civic

Platform party led by Donald Tusk. Tusk and several of his party ministers traveled

to Dublin to address the overwhelmingly young Polish migrant population, and

emergent Polish migrant leadership on the ground contributed to the mobilization

efforts targeting the over 24,000 eligible Polish voters in Ireland.[92] Some of the

local Polish activists involved in bringing Tusk to Dublin became increasingly

interested in turning the attention of their community to political life in their newly

adopted country. Therefore, between the disgruntled leadership in the African

---

[92] "Turnout high in Polish elections," *RTÉ*, October 21, 2007. According to media reports after the elections, 70% of Polish voters in Ireland supported Civic Platform; the party received 42% of the vote overall (Metro Éireann 2007).

community and the energized young organizers in the Polish community, migrant leaders, particularly in and around Dublin, were primed to make the leap into electoral politics – and they wanted to bring their communities with them.

Starting in the summer of 2008, Cormac O'Donnell, an official in the Dublin City Council Office of Integration, began to assemble a steering committee that would be tasked with launching and managing a migrant voter registration drive. O'Donnell used both his personal and organizational networks to build the committee: for the last several years he had taken an interest in migrant integration at the local level, and had even been involved in European and North American exchanges on incorporation best practices. Through these different exchanges he had become friendly with many migrant community organization leaders, and used these networks to build a steering committee on migrant voter registration. Eventually the committee had sixteen member organizations whose representatives were either personal contacts of O'Donnell's or were recommended by his contacts. While O'Donnell was careful to assemble a diverse group of organizations, not everyone was happy with the personalized nature of how participants on the committee were selected; one migrant activist voiced concerns that while the city was lucky to have people in the DCC who "are really committed...for them it's not just a paycheck" there was a problem in that too much in Irish political life was driven by "characters and not the ethos" and this "character driven" approach made it difficult to institutionalize programs and policies (NGO13, personal interview, Dublin, July 2009).

In 2008, the Lord Mayor of Dublin, on behalf of the City Council, announced the official launch of a migrant voter registration drive. The city's objectives were clear: a press release noted, "Facilitating participation in the political life of the city is a key element in promoting and supporting the integration of ethnic minorities in the life of the city".[93] The main objectives of the steering committee were to develop a public multi-lingual voter registration campaign that would be followed by a "train the trainer" program targeting immigrant community activists who would then turn around and register people in their communities to vote.

Yet despite the pomp and circumstances of the announcement, and the stated objectives of the DCC, the migrant voter initiative had a relatively limited budget of €45,000 – by comparison, the referendum commission had a budget of €4 million.[94] The committee had to rely on the (not insignificant) knowledge and networks of the participants. The committee was able to, among its own members, translate voter registration education materials into over twenty languages, and multi-lingual flyers and posters were distributed across both city offices and among migrant-serving organizations in Dublin and beyond – indeed, migrant community association networks were so extensive that the materials produced by the DCC Committee soon began to make their way across the country digitally via blogs,

[93] "Migrant Voters Campaign: press release," *Office of the Lord Mayor press release* (2008).
[94] To put these figures into perspective, Ireland's population at the time was just over four million people. However, the population of the Greater Dublin area was over 1.8 million. Therefore, compared to the efforts to inform voters about the citizenship referendum, efforts to inform immigrants about voting rights seems woefully under-funded, even when you account for immigrants as a percentage of the Greater Dublin population (18%).

email, and community websites.[95] In addition, the city was able to work out a deal

with Dublin Bus to put posters in bus shelters along key lines that ran through

immigrant communities. However, an attempt to hold a migrant "town hall"

meeting where a panel of party representatives would address and respond to an

audience of new immigrants fell though, despite support from the national

broadcaster RTÉ, who offered to host the event. In addition, some steering

committee members complained about a lack of cooperation with the Department of

the Environment and Local Government, the national bureaucracy in charge of

managing local elections.

Despite the inability of the committee to act as a bridge between migrant

communities and political parties, the voter registration effort promoted two

different kinds of bridge building. First, and perhaps most surprisingly, the DCC

program strengthened the relationship between migrant organizations and An

Garda Síochána, the Irish police force (heretofore referred to as the Garda). Under

Irish law, voters who register for a local election less than six months before election

day have to do so at a police station; subsequently several of the groups that

participated on the steering committee organized community events where Garda

representatives came to them in order to register people to vote. This was a far less

intimidating situation than going to a police station, especially for immigrants from

countries where state security forces are generally feared, not seen as allies; as one

African community organizer noted, "Even if you have done nothing wrong, it is a

---

[95] See Appendix for examples of posters and materials created and distributed by the
Steering Committee.

very scary thing to go to a police station! (NGO13,personal interview, Dublin, July 2009). Several steering committee members noted that the Garda were very good about coming to community events in order to promote familiarity; one participant who had a good relationship with the local Gardaí laughed that in his district "they [the Garda] always come to every dinner; they are getting quite fat!" (NGO11, personal interview, Dublin, July 2009). The close engagement with the Garda is also significant because they are responsible for both border control and visa issuance. Taken together, for migrant communities, the Garda are significant gatekeepers: they both guard access to the country itself at the border, and to its polity through the voter rolls. The fact that the DCC initiative helped to somewhat improve migrant-Garda relations is therefore in an of itself a small but important step towards meeting the stated goal of 'supporting the integration of ethnic minorities in the life of the city'; as Bloemraad (2006) notes, interaction with representatives of the state can affect "understandings of citizenship, especially of immigrants' legitimate political standing" (pg. 4). This is not to say that these relationships are perfect – at some police stations migrants were erroneously told that they could not register – but the sense was that these issues were one-off, rather than systemic problems.

The other key benefit of the DCC voter registration drive was that it facilitated network-building among a wide and varied set of migrant community actors. The steering committee included businessmen, trade union activists, religious representatives, and community workers from over a dozen different

countries. Some already had close ties to political parties – at least one participant was asked to run for office – while others were disconnected from the parties and were, frankly, quite suspicious of them. Regardless of the background of the participants, however, many spoke of how beneficial it had been to make connections across different immigrant communities, which in Ireland vary significantly in size, socioeconomic status, and political status. Therefore, although the DCC effort did not do much in terms of building a bridge between migrant communities and political parties, it did serve as a bridge-building exercise *within* the diverse immigrant community leadership cohort.

The one outcome from the DCC effort that remains uncertain was its actual effect on voter registration rates. A report from the Africa Centre and New Communities Partnership claims that the campaign contributed to an additional 15,000 voters added to the register.[96] While for the purposes of this project, the outcome of interest is incorporative activity not incorporative outcomes, the actual number of migrant voters motivated by the DCC campaign is almost impossible to ascertain: there is no way to discern what effect the campaign had on voter registration rates, especially given that the pool of potential voters grew exponentially between the 2004 and 2009 election cycles.

So just what happened to the political parties when it came to migrant voter registration and mobilization efforts? Different groups had different opinions.

---

[96] "Our Vote Can Make a Difference: Voter Registration and Education Campaign," *report* issued by the New Communities Partnership and the Africa Centre, June 2010, available online at:
http://www.newcommunities.ie/download/pdf/ncp_ac_vep__report_full_colour_final_version.pdf.

While one participant noted that in their community "there was no involvement with the parties – no communication, no contact, nothing" (NGO12, personal interview, Dublin, June 2009), other members of the committee speculated that parties did engage in outreach to migrant communities, but this was primarily limited to Eastern Europeans, most notably Poles (the largest immigrant group in 2009, after the British). As noted, several of the steering committee members had ties to parties, but this was at a personal, rather than community, or group-based level. One committee member resented some of the back-channel maneuvering of parties for they saw it as lazy; as she put it: "[We were not going to be] handing the people to political parties...they would have to *sweat* to get to the people. We weren't here to work for their election campaigns" (NGO9, personal interview, Dublin, July 2009). This was not an ungrounded sentiment: in Irish local political culture, there is an expectation that candidates will come and personally ask people for their votes. This norm of campaigning is so strong that the Irish political scientists Liam Weeks and Aodh Quinlivian found that in the 2004 local election cycle only four candidates did not directly canvass for votes, and of these only one actually won a seat (2009). Therefore, the reluctance of the parties to participate in direct outreach programs to migrant communities through the planned DCC/RTÉ forum could be interpreted as an insulting breach of a well-understood norm of Irish political life.

Some party activists and officials had a different take on the issue, however. In their view, the main problem with doing mass voter outreach to immigrants is

that nobody actually knew how they would vote. Ironically, officials from the more

left-wing parties on the Irish political spectrum were the most concerned about this:

despite their general support for migrant political and legal rights (including

birthright citizenship), they were concerned about the potential social conservatism

of migrant voters, Poles in particular. Poles, like the Irish, are overwhelmingly

Catholic, and many on the political left in Ireland had engaged in trench warfare

with the Catholic Church over social policy for decades, most notably around the

issues of divorce, homosexuality, and abortion.[97] Subsequently, the idea of

potentially bringing hundreds of new socially conservative voters into the political

system was anathema to them.

To some extent, this assessment of Polish political behavior is

understandable: Donald Tusk's Civic Platform, the party that won 70% of the Polish

vote in Ireland, would be considered economically liberal but socially conservative

by European standards. However, this does not explain why the more socially

conservative parties seemed unwilling to participate in the DCC programs; Civic

Platform looks a lot like the pro-business Fine Gael politically - both parties even

caucus with the same party in the European Parliament (the European's People's

Party). That said, it is also unclear the extent to which young Polish electoral

support for Tusk was an endorsement of his party, or a rejection of the social

---

[97] Divorce was not legal in Ireland until 1996, and even today it takes five years for a
divorce to be finalized. Laws criminalizing homosexual activity were on the books until
1993. Abortion was effectively illegal in Ireland, until 2013, a position that was further
entrenched by a 1983 referendum that added a clause to the Irish constitution protecting
the rights of the unborn. As of yet, it is still unclear what the implications of the 2013 law
will be for access to abortion in the Republic.

policies, rising nationalism and euro-skepticism of the Kaczynski brothers, who at the time dominated Polish politics.[98] It does seem likely that general uncertainty about immigrant voters has contributed to disinterest on the part of Irish political parties in direct mobilization efforts for local elections: in the best of circumstances, this is a time-consuming, expensive task, so if there are uncertainties involved, it may just be best to let sleeping dogs lie – at least until those dogs prove that they can bite. The relatively low migrant voter registration rates, however, mean that, for now anyway, the immigrant community is not seen as either interested enough in politics to spend time trying to woo people to vote, nor organized enough to punish parties that ignore them, or pass anti-immigrant legislation. Therefore, immigrants as 'new minorities' may have to demand attention from parties in order to get a say in decision-making processes rather than waiting for parties to extend an invitation to take a seat at the table of power - and the best way to demand that attention is to prove that they can make or break candidates at the ballot box.

Finally, despite the best efforts of local bureaucrats to overcome the disinterest of political parties, at the end of the day, their efforts were curtailed by party behavior in another arena outside of electoral politics: budgeting. In 2010, the DCC Office of Integration was cut in half, largely due to budgetary reasons. In light of the feeble funding allocated to the DCC effort, and the funding cuts to the DCC migrant outreach staff, the Irish experience with 'bureaucratic incorporation' suggests that it is nearly impossible to sidestep the role of parties in this process.

---

[98] At the time, Lech Kaczynski was the President and his twin brother Jaroslaw was running for re-election as Prime Minister.

This is a key point, because there is a broader debate today within the study of immigrant political incorporation over the role that public bureaucracies could – or should - play in incorporation (Bloemraad 2005, 2006; Marrow 2010).

The DCC experience suggests that bureaucratic incorporation through local government may be, at best, a limited option. This is in part due to the competencies of local versus national government: local government may fret about maintaining social cohesion and order, but for immigrants, national government is where the real political action is at, since it is national legislators who make citizenship and immigration policy. In addition, local government agencies are in an even worse position than local party officials: they do not even have the benefit of partisanship – a major motivator for political engagement. One head of a migrant organization operating in Dublin put it bluntly: "Local government isn't political, but wants political participation...this is a little bit stupid I think" (NGO4, personal interview, Dublin, 23 June). It is also due to the fact that budget allocations for bureaucracies are in the hand of elected officials, and when the party balance of power in government changes and/or economic conditions change, bureaucracies may find that old axiom to be true: the best-laid plans of mice and men often go awry. While the efforts of the DCC were certainly a clear example of incorporative activity on the part of native actors – and an effort duly noted among migrant community leaders – given its vulnerability to the political process, public bureaucracies that are in the end accountable to the whims of politicians may not be the most stable source of incorporative activity in the long run.

Capacity-Building

The final area of incorporative activity under investigation is capacity building. I define this as strategic or financial partnerships with migrant community organizations in order to enhance the capacity of these groups to make their own demands on the state. Conceived as such, capacity-building can encompass activities both on the parts of explicitly political organizations such as parties, or more non-partisan organizations such as community groups and public agencies. For example, the DCC migrant voter campaign was a clear example of attempts to engage in capacity-building; indeed, through its fostering of new networks and working relationships between the state and immigrant organizations and between immigrant organizations, the campaign was an almost prototypical example of capacity-building incorporative activity. Here, I focus on the actions of two key groups: state agencies and worker organizations.

State Agencies and Capacity-Building

In 1998, the Irish government created the National Consultative Committee on Racism and Interculturalism (NCCRI). The mission of the organization was to act as a bridge between the government and NGOs in order to:

- Develop an inclusive and strategic approach to combat racism by focusing on its prevention and promoting an intercultural society
- Contribute to policy and legislative developments and seek to encourage dialogue and progress in all areas relating to racism and interculturalism
- Encourage integrated actions towards acknowledging, celebrating and accommodating cultural diversity
- Establish and maintain links with organisations or individuals involved in

      addressing racism and promoting interculturalism at national, European and
      international level
- Provide a national framework for responding to and consulting with key
European and international bodies on issues related to racism and
interculturalism.

As with social partnership, a key issue here was consultation: the NCCRI was meant to allow for some degree of input from the migrant community into government incorporation policies; the government, meanwhile, would support programs to help migrants adjust to life in Ireland. Also, as a neutral third party, in theory the NCCRI was meant to both 1) monitor social relations and incidents of racism and 2) offer reports and analyses addressing these dynamics. In practice, the NCCRI developed into a key ally of the immigrant community: its reports on racism and the problems of incorporation, and the subsequent media attention they attracted, allowed migrant groups felt as it they had some outside confirmation of their experiences with racism and inter-group conflict in Ireland and a key ally in the public sphere to highlight these issues.

Despite the work of the NCCRI, there was still a sense that Ireland not only lacked a cohesive migration policy, but that these issues were not particularly important to the government. To that end, migrant groups and allies demanded both an integration plan for the national government and some kind of immigration ministry that could play a more direct role in linking migrant communities to the government. In 2007, they got their wish – kind of. The government created a new position, the Minister for Integration, and a new government office, the Office of the Minister for Integration (OMI). As with the social partnership agreement, the OMI

was intended to be both consultative and deliberative: the new Minister of State for

Integration, Conor Lenihan, laid out the mission of the OMI in one of his first

speeches as minister:

> We are committed to social cohesion and this has been given a new political focus
> through my appointment as Minister of State with responsibility for integration. My
> office has been given a cross-departmental mandate to develop, drive and co-
> ordinate integration policy across other Departments, agencies and services. It will
> be involved in the development of a long-term national policy on integration
> informed by widespread consultation at a national level.
>
> Stakeholder consultation is critical to successful integration. The process of
> consultation with NGOs and key stakeholders has already begun...
>
> ... I have plans to establish a range of other consultative structures. As I already
> announced, I intend to establish a task force on integration in 2008 to identify key
> issues affecting immigrant communities. This will consult widely with the
> immigrant and indigenous populations, visit communities, examine previous
> research and report back with specific practical and implementable
> recommendations for the medium to long-term development of policy which must be
> introduced now rather than later.[99]

While the principles of consultation laid out in the Minister's statement were

a positive step for migrant communities, what people were not so sure about was

the government's choice for the Ministerial position. Conor Lenihan had an

impeccable political pedigree: he father, grandfather, and aunt all served as TDs

(parliamentarians) for Fianna Fáil. However, in 2005, during a debate in the Dáil,

when Socialist TD Joe Higgins began attacking the government's position on airline

privatization, Lenihan, then Minister of State at the Department of Foreign Affairs,

was caught on camera telling Higgins he should "Stick with the kebabs", referring

---

[99] Seanad (Ireland), Integration Policy: Statements, vol. 188, No. 3, 13 December 2007 (209-
211)

to a labor dispute involving Turkish workers that Higgins was involved in.[100] Given

that these comments were seen as xenophobic and offensive, some questioned

whether or not Lenihan was well-suited to be tasked with managing the

government's relations with a rapidly diversifying immigrant community. At any

rate, those concerned about Lenihan's suitability for the job had little to worry

about, for he did not last long: the OMI went through three ministers in four years

(2007-2011) until under the new Fine Gael government it was disbanded as a

ministry and re-opened as the "Office for the Promotion of Migrant Integration"

within the Department of Justice and Equality.

The OMI was not the only government-subsidized organization to feel the

winds of change: the NCCRI closed at the end of 2008 due to budget cuts.

Combined with the cuts to the DCC Office of Integration, by 2011, nearly the entire

bureaucratic infrastructure that Irish politicians put in place in order to facilitate

migrant political and social integration no longer existed, or at best, were small

offices rolled into larger bureaucracies. While Ireland was at the time experiencing

a painful recession, and cuts to public agencies and services were largely expected,

the rapid dismantling of the institutional infrastructure developed to address new

immigration sent a strong signal to both native and immigrant communities: these

programs are not politically important. Unfortunately for local officials and migrant

community organizations, migration was not an issue that could be ignored, as hard

times meant that conflict over access to public housing and other cash-strapped

public services intensified. As one migrant community organizer lamented, "At the

---

[100] Most kebab stands in Dublin are Turkish.

very time we need these organizations the most, the government is taking them away" (NGO15, personal interview, Dublin, May 2010).

Worker Organizations and Capacity-Building

The other opportunity for capacity-building incorporative activity was through migrant community partnerships with trade unions and other worker organizations. At the point when migration began picking up in Ireland, unions were in a rather unique position: social partnership meant that, unlike their British and American counterparts, they had some say over both industrial and social policy. They also had a tighter grip on their membership: in 2005, 35% of Irish workers were unionized versus 28.8% of British workers (CSO 2010a; Department for Business Innovation and Skills 2010). However, social partnership was a huge boon to public more than private-sector workers: while 56.5% of UK public sector workers were unionized in 2005, close to 75% of Irish public sector workers were, and over time, this imbalance started to become problematic. First, by basically ignoring the private sector, unions were left flatfooted with the private sector-led labor market expansion of the Celtic Tiger. Second, for years, organized labor in Ireland could be categorized as 'business unionism' rather than 'social movement unionism': unions were more concerned with servicing existing members than recruiting new members. While this is a problem that most unions in post-industrial countries are grappling with, in Ireland this dynamic was exacerbated by social partnership, as there was growing concern that because pay raises were negotiated with the government rather than directly between union officials and

employers, workers were losing sense of what, if any, value the union added to their lives. Finally, and most distressing, it was not clear that social partnership was working for low-wage workers: for the 2006 bargaining cycle, Mandate, a union that represents retail and other low-wage private-sector service workers, sat out of wage negotiations and instead took employers on directly via industrial action. By going outside of the social partnership process, Mandate was able to negotiate a better wage and benefits packet for grocery retail workers than they would have otherwise, and this sent a strong signal to both organizers and low-wage workers that perhaps social partnership wasn't all it was cracked up to be.[101]

It is within this context of weak private sector representation that Eastern European workers flooded the hotel and restaurant and construction industries in the mid-2000s. Faced with unprecedented migration and the expansion of sectors of the labor market where union presence was relatively low, Irish trade unions sought out a number of partnerships with other organizations in order to better gain access to migrant workers. The largest trade union, SIPTU, hired several Eastern European organizers who were plucked from migrant-led organizations. On the non-organizing side, SIPTU teamed up with one of the biggest organizing unions in the United States, the Service Employees International Union (SEIU) in order to expand both their strategic research and organizing capacity: SEIU is known in the U.S. for its "Justice for Janitors" campaigns targeting immigrant workers. Mandate also linked up with American organizing unions and established

---

[101] Brian Sheehan. 2007. "Union secures above-norm pay deal at Tesco," European Industrial Relations Observatory.

organizing teams. And at the federation level, ICTU (the equivalent of the AFL-

CIO in the United States) hired a migrant outreach coordinator.

However, the more radical, direct representation of migrant worker issues

happened not through the trade unions, but through worker centers, most notably

the Migrant Rights Center of Ireland (MRCI). The MRCI describes it mission and

approach as such:

> MRCI works from a particular understanding and analysis of the challenges facing migrants and the solutions required to best effect social change so that they can live as equal members of Irish society. This analysis is guided by an equality and social justice framework that situates community work as the foundation to its approach to social change.
>
> A community work approach involves creating the conditions for the participation and empowerment of communities/groups affected by inequality to take collective action for social change. It involves promotion and support of migrant worker participation in policy and decision-making arenas, including advocacy and campaign efforts. In addition, it seeks to support collectivisation (e.g. Action Groups such as Domestic Workers) and the development of migrant leaders.[102]

A key difference between union organizing and the MRCI approach was that

the MRCI focused much more heavily on migrant capacity-building, particularly

among female migrant workers, in order to help them articulate their issues and

make their demands directly on the state. However, the MRCI also tends to

concern itself more with broader policy issues of concern to migrant communities:

racism, social exclusion, and exploitation feature heavily, and many of its

organizing campaigns are not contract-oriented in the sense of union organizing

campaigns, but rather issue-oriented.

---

[102] The MRCI mission statement is available on their website at:
http://www.mrci.ie/background/ [accessed September 8, 2013].

The MRCI has occasionally worked with SIPTU on specific campaigns. However, in conversations with migrant worker organizers both inside and outside of the labor movement, this could at times be a tense relationship. Similar to the problems faced by SEIU and other organizing unions in the United States, Irish union partnerships with migrant organizations can seem one-sided and instrumental: migrant worker organizations may have access to workers, but unions have access to money and power, and this can lead to tension over the nature of partnerships and tactics.

Taken together, on paper Irish unions seem to be doing many of the right things when it comes to migrant workers: they have tried to reach out to new immigrant communities via both their own staffing policies and partnerships, they have tried to re-orient themselves towards taking a more proactive approach to internal organizing, and for the 2005-2006 round of social partnership negotiations, they even called for immigrant-friendly changes to the visa system.[103] In practice, however, there are a number of problems. First, in the view of some migrant organizers and community leaders, union activity and migrant community partnerships have been less about building the capacity of migrant communities to be active participants in Irish political life, and more about co-optation. Subsequently, some migrant leaders interested in labor market-related issues feel sidelined in the debates about their own future; one Dublin-based migrant community organization official emphasized this point, insisting, "We have our own voices. We can represent ourselves!" (NGO5, personal interview, Dublin, April

---

[103] Ed Carty, "Unions warn on migrant policy," *Irish News*, October 19, 2005.

2010). In addition, it is also unclear how deep ICTU's commitment to migrant worker issues is: their migrant outreach coordinator is actually based in Belfast because the funding for these outreach efforts is not coming through the union, but rather through money available to groups in Northern Ireland specifically to work on post-conflict 'good relations' issues.

The bigger problem though is the fact that, despite these recent internal changes, the structure of the social partnership agreements means that the power of Irish trade unions lies not in their relationship with their members, but in their relationship with the government. Social partnership was established in order to prevent industrial action, insure wage restraint in order to make Ireland more attractive to foreign investors (particularly from the U.S.), and create a deliberative body to set social and economic policy. The American model for organizing migrant workers, however, particularly in the low-wage service sector, relies on direct confrontation – exactly what social partnership was meant to prevent. The American model is also is reliant on a staff that treats worker organizing and representation as a vocation, not as a 9-to-5 job. An additional problem for Irish labor unions then is the fact that their internal culture at the time when migration picked up was contrary to the American organizing ethos, but the state of the economy and the political changes in the Dáil are increasingly contrary to social partnership. It remains to be seen if unions can truly engage in capacity-building with immigrant workers because at this point, their more pressing issue may be simply building their internal capacity to survive life after social partnership, which

seems unlikely to survive the recession and Fianna Fáil's departure from government. The future seems grim: as one unhappy organizer speculated, "At the rate they are going, these unions won't be around in ten years" (Union3, personal interview, Dublin, July 2009).

IV. Discussion and Conclusion

The basic question that this thesis grapples with is, what explains incorporative activity (or lack thereof) on the part of parties, and to a lesser extent unions and NGOs, in new destinations? Ireland stands out as one European new destination where the path to incorporative activity seemed relatively clear when immigration first began gaining momentum in the 1990s: a well-educated migrant population, migrant access to citizenship, non-citizen voting rights for local elections, and state-supported bureaucracies that served as a bridge between native actors and migrant communities meant that for native political actors there were few institutional impediments to migrant outreach. Yet despite these advantages, incorporative activity was sporadic, and at times, native actors – namely, parties – moved to actually close off access to the polity. Why?

A return to the review of the literature offered in Chapter Two may help us to tease out some possible explanations. The first set of arguments to explain political behavior looks to power dynamics. Groups that are seeking to gain power – whether through membership drives or vote share – are the ones most likely to organize new groups into politics, for bringing new constituents into the game

allows them to shift the balance of power within the system. To some extent, we see this dynamic happening with party politics: the Greens, as one of the smallest parties in Ireland, had a relatively large pool of migrant candidates, and this may have helped them to attract the attention of migrant voters. Conversely, we would also expect that those political organizations that are hegemonic – i.e. they completely dominate a given political system – to be disinterested in incorporative activity, as they don't need new voters or members in order to hang onto power. This may explain why the trade union approach to immigrant workers has been underwhelming: under social partnership, unions don't have to mobilize workers in order to get a contract or concessions – instead, they pick up the phone and negotiate with the social partners. This is in notable contrast to their British counterparts, who, having been cast in the political wilderness by the Thatcher administration, had to actively seek out and mobilize new membership – and this includes migrant workers.

Can this hegemonic theory of local power dynamics explain the behavior of Fianna Fáil? It is certainly true that Fianna Fáil has dominated Irish politics like no other party: it has been in government over 70% of the time since independence, and Eamon De Valera was able to use that dominance in the early 1930s in order to completely redefine both the nation's institutions and narrative of self-understanding. However, Fianna Fáil's ability to dominate Irish politics has waned over the last three decades: before the 1980s, they refused to go into government with other parties, yet since then, they have had to rely on coalitions with small

parties, and it was widely known going into the 2009 local elections that, given the

state of the economy, they were facing a bloodbath at the polls. Given their

weakening position vis-à-vis the other parties, and the influx of new potential voters

who were neither bound by civil war politics nor livid at the government, it was

surprising that Fianna Fáil was so disengaged from migrant voter mobilization.[104]

The second set of explanations draws on theories of identity to explain

differences in political behavior: we should be able to predict, based on the

ideological bent or political identity of a political actor how they will respond or

behave when confronted with key political issues. As with power theories of

political behavior, identity-based theories seem to explain some but not all of the

incorporative activity we saw in Ireland. What we saw with the Green Party,

Labour, and other left-wing parties, was largely what we would expect: left-wing

parties are generally supportive of migrant citizenship rights and liberal migration

regimes. However, identity-based arguments run into two fundamental problems in

Ireland. The first is Ireland's lack of a traditional left-right political spectrum.

While Fine Gael is perhaps most accurately described as a Christian Democratic

party in the Continental European mold (and caucuses as such in the European

Parliament), Fianna Fáil is more accurately described as populist, rather than

belonging on any standard political spectrum. The Republican Party's rather

uneven approach to economic and social policy was most on display in the 1990s and

2000s: when representing the Fianna Fáil government in her 2000 speech to the

---

[104] In addition, the party's insistence on holding the 2004 citizenship referendum at the same time as the local elections suggests that the party was, at lest in part, seeking to improve vote share – exactly the kind of activity that a hegemonic party does not need to engage in.

American Bar Association, Mary Harney tried to distance herself from collectivist

Europe ('Berlin') in an attempt to align the government's policies with the more

individualist, market-oriented ('Boston') approach to political economy. But just

four years later, Bertie Ahern told an interviewer that he was 'one of the last

socialists left'.[105] The Irish media had a field day as did the opposition: the leader of

the Labour Party even went so far as to address him as "Comrade Taoiseach"

during Questions time in the Dáil. But Ahern's 'red' turn on economic policy was

better considered as part and parcel of Fianna Fáil's long-term political strategy to

stay in power rather than some great ideological conversion: his embrace of

socialism came in the midst of a contentious battle over the public ownership of Aer

Lingus, the national airline. The *Irish Times* political columnist Stephen Collins

took note:

> All in all, then, Ahern got a good return on his little burst of enthusiasm for
> socialism. He helped redefine Fianna Fail's image, caused trouble for the Labour
> leadership and put it up to Labour's Dublin backbenchers. If the episode helps to
> drive a wedge between Labour and Fine Gael, then the Taoiseach will really get full
> value for his socialist solo run.[106]

Ahern's approach seems to echo De Valera's comments during his first

speech to the newly formed Fianna Fáil party in the 1920s when he put to the

audience: "If you want to know what the direction of that line of advance at the

moment is, ask yourselves what line a young man would be likely to take". If

nothing else, Fianna Fáil has always know where its base stood and which way the

---

[105] "Ahern 'a genuine socialist' says McCreevy," breakingnews.ie, November 6 2005,
available online at: http://www.breakingnews.ie/ireland/ahern-a-genuine-socialist-says-
mccreevy-228947.html.
[106] Stephen Collins, "Politics," *Irish Times*, November 21, 2004.

wind was blowing, and while this approach may have contributed to its electoral

success over the years, it can also lead to extraordinarily cynical political behavior,

a situation that did not pass unremarked upon by Pat Rabbitte of the Labour Party

during the 'Comrade Taoiseach' debate in the Dáil:

> I want to ask comrade Taoiseach now that he has come out as a socialist how this
> will affect the ordinary lives of our citizens? Nothing has stretched credulity so
> much since the press conferences in Baghdad of "comical Ali". Will the Taoiseach
> say what this will mean in practice for ordinary people? How will it change the lives
> of ordinary people now that a true socialist leads the government...People will want
> to know if his calculated, cynical announcement at the weekend will mean a change
> of direction in the Government policies he has pursued for seven and a half
> years...[107]

What made this situation even more bizarre, yet even more emblematic of

Fianna Fáil's populist approach, was at the same time as Ahern was declaring his

affinity for socialism in Dublin, his party was caucusing with the nationalist right

in the European Parliament: Fianna Fáil, as a member of the now-defunct Union

for Europe of the Nations (UEN), sat with the Danish People's Party and the

Northern League of Italy, among others. Therefore, according to traditional

economic and/or social metrics, it is nearly impossible to classify Fianna Fáil as

anything other than savvy populists – which explains why and how the 'socialist'

Ahern could stand behind the citizenship referendum even as every other left-wing

party in the Dáil vigorously opposed it.

The second problem is the question of republicanism. Since the 1700s,

republicans have repeatedly risen up against the British state in order to establish

an independent Irish republic, and a willingness to use violence to meet that

---

[107] Dáil Éireann, Leader's Questions, vol. 592, No. 3, 16 November 2004 (65).

political end has, to some extent inextricably linked republican identity to physical force. This linkage is particularly strong within the republican movement itself: Anthony McIntyre, a former IRA Volunteer during the Troubles who has since become an academic, notes that among militant republicans in Northern Ireland, those who chose the ballot box over bombs were "for years viewed...as wasters – [Sinn Féin was seen as] a hiding place for those who wanted to be republicans without the baggage of suffering that went with being members of the IRA" (2003,184). Among the most militant, many of the most revered leaders of this movement were those who called for not just a republic, but a democratic, egalitarian, and socialist republic: Tone, Pearse and James Connolly, the dedicated socialist and co-founder of the Labour Party. Yet many of those who supported the aims of the republican movement, and who self-identified as republicans, were not driven solely – or even at all - by ideas about a more egalitarian society, but rather fought in the name of an idealized 'imagined community' of the Irish nation that was Catholic, Gaelic, and rural. The triumph of this 'pastoral' vision of the republic as articulated by De Valera was captured in the 1937 Constitution, and for much of Ireland's modern political history, Fianna Fáil, the self-titled Republican Party, has been the guardian of that vision. But starting in the 1980s when Sinn Féin, revived by and under the control of Northern republicans, came south and began to gain ground in the Republic, the differences in these visions of republicanism were thrown into sharper relief: both parties commemorate the men of 1916, and both have historic ties to the IRA, but in its current iteration, Sinn Féin and Fianna Fáil

have strongly disagreed on a number of policy issues, most notably on the question of citizenship - a fundamental issue for any republican.

The final issue is institutional: is there something about Ireland's electoral rules or political procedures that inhibit incorporative activity? The answer may lie not with the fact that these institutions exist, but rather, they may have something to do with *how* they came into being in the first place. The common thread running through the development of Ireland's civic institutions for the last century was the need to define the political and legal relationship between Ireland and Great Britain, not Ireland and "foreigners": despite the GAA restrictions against "foreign games", the reality of the situation is that there are foreigners and there are British people – neither of these two groups are Irish, but nor do they have equal standing in Irish society. While from a distance, Ireland's civic institutions may have seemed open to foreigners, in reality, they were open to British citizens.

So what are the key lessons from the Irish case? We generally believe that native political actors in new destination societies are ill-equipped to take on the task of political incorporation due to a lack of migrant-serving institutions and organizations, and a lack of historical narratives around immigration to legitimize the inclusion of new immigrants in civic life. Yet, even before migration became a phenomenon in Ireland, the country had – quite unintentionally - developed a series of institutions, most notably citizenship and electoral institutions, that were extraordinarily friendly to immigrants. With new immigration, however, those institutions were vulnerable to retrenchment, and the well-meaning allies that

emerged were often swamped by party politics. Most strikingly, Ireland's lack of a coherent historical narrative around migration and its relation to citizenship meant that, in contrast to countries like the United States where these narratives are well-developed, Irish political elites by and large did not have a framework for understanding, interpreting, and acting upon this new social phenomenon. Given that the largest party in the state was already prone to populism and policy u-turns, it is not surprising that incorporative activity was uneven. What is surprising, however, is how much events in the Republic seem to differ from concurrent events on the other side of the border in Northern Ireland, and those differences are the subject of the next chapter.

Table 4.1: Immigrant Candidates by Party and Region of Origin, 2009

Party	Region of Origin					
	Africa	Central and Eastern Europe	Western Europe	Americas	Asia/Pacific	TOTAL
Fianna Fáil	2	7	0	0	1	10
Fine Gael	4	4	0	0	0	8
Labour	0	2	1	1	0	4
Green Party	5	2	0	1	0	8
Sinn Féin	0	0	0	0	0	0
Independents	7	0	0	0	1	8
TOTAL	18	15	1	2	2	38

Figure 4.1:
DCC Migrant Voter Registration Campaign Flyer

Chapter 5 - Old Grievances, New Institutions: Incorporative Activity in Northern Ireland

The whole map of Europe has been changed. The position of countries has been violently altered. The modes of thought of men, the whole outlook on affairs, the grouping of parties, all have encountered violent and tremendous changes in the deluge of the world. But as the deluge subsides and the waters fall short we see the dreary steeples of Fermanagh and Tyrone emerging once again. The integrity of their quarrel is one of the few institutions that has been unaltered in the cataclysm which has swept the world.

- *Winston Churchill, address to Parliament, Westminster, 1920*

How do you integrate into a disintegrated society?

- *Community worker, Personal interview, Belfast, September 2011*

Upon first glance, Northern Ireland is a place that seems irretrievably broken. Levels of self-segregation in housing and schools are extraordinarily high. Walls and fences separating Catholic and Protestant neighborhoods, commonly known as 'peace lines', have proliferated across the region; there are more today than there were in 1998, when the thirty-year conflict known as 'the Troubles' formally came to an end. Barbed wire, paramilitary graffiti, and security cameras are a constant reminder of the region's legacy of conflict, and sectarian tensions still spill over into violence with alarming regularity.

Despite these depressing reminders of the region's violent history, there is a different side to the North, one that may surprise outsiders and residents alike. Northern Ireland has some of the highest levels of voluntary activity in the UK. Its laws protecting the rights of women, gays, and ethnic minorities were some of the strongest in Europe at the time of their creation (Equality Challenge Unit 2010). And despite a deeply entrenched sectarian political system where family name,

neighborhood of birth, and religious affiliation serve as key social and political markers, in 2007, Northern Ireland's voters became the first in Europe to elect a Chinese-born candidate to serve in a parliamentary body.[108]

Indeed, perhaps the biggest surprise about Northern Ireland these days – to both outside observers, and certainly to residents - is that it has become a magnet for immigration. Prior to the 1990s, Northern Ireland would have been a place where emigration was more the norm. However, with peace in 1998, and the opening of the UK and Irish labor market to new Eastern European EU accession states in 2004, the region experienced an unprecedented influx of foreign workers, and the foreign-born population increased four-fold from 1997 to 2010.

While the rate of immigrants as a percentage of the population is still relatively low at 4.5%, the sudden influx of foreigners raised many of the usual concerns about political incorporation, the process by which migrants become a part of "mainstream political debates, practices, and decision making" (Bloemraad 2006:6-7). However, given Northern Ireland's political history, these questions were – and continue to be – particularly fraught: what does political incorporation mean in a place where party affiliation is generally sectarian? What does taking up the 'task' of incorporation mean in a society where almost all political activity centers on the deeply divisive 'national question', namely Northern Ireland's status as part of the United Kingdom? To paraphrase one community worker, how are immigrants supposed to integrate into a disintegrated society?

---

[108] Anna Lo, of the Alliance Party.

Despite no historical legacy of immigration to guide community groups, state bureaucracies, parties, and other political organizations, and their own internal legacy of distrust and violence, political actors in Northern Ireland have taken up the task of incorporation surprisingly well.[109] Parties have made tentative steps towards including new immigrants in electoral politics: several migrant candidates were nominated in the last election cycle, and migrants are playing an increasingly visible role within the parties themselves. Labor organizations, neighborhood associations, and a variety of non-profit groups are working directly with migrant communities to educate workers about their rights. In addition, community groups have engaged in capacity building by establishing strategic partnerships with migrant organizations, and helping these groups gain access to public funding for community projects. The willingness of local political actors to engage in 'incorporative activities' with new immigrants is clear. What is less clear is why they choose to do so.

In this chapter, I argue that there are two key factors driving incorporative activity in Northern Ireland today. The first involves the province's post-conflict political institutions. The social unrest that grew in the 1960s was fuelled by a sense in Catholic communities that the province's political institutions, most notably its voting eligibility rules, were exclusionary. Inspired by the black civil

---

[109] Here I refer to the working definition of incorporative activity established in Chapter 2: the actions that political organizations take in order to facilitate migrant membership in the polity. Using Andersen's (2010) framework for measuring incorporative activity - creating a pathway to citizenship, facilitating electoral participation, educating migrants about opportunities for participation, and providing resources to help them do so – I focus on two key areas: 1) facilitating electoral participation, and 2) what I call 'capacity building', namely a combination of migrant education and resource provision.

rights movement in the United States, Catholic community organizers put forth an alternative narrative of inclusion and equality that challenged the very foundations of the sectarian state. When anger over ongoing political marginalization spilled over into paramilitary violence leading to the thirty-year conflict known as 'the Troubles', the unsustainability of the status quo became abundantly clear to the state as well. Subsequently, during peace negotiations in the 1990s, one of the central issues for parties and community organizations alike was the need to re-build political institutions in a way that included all members of society, whether Protestant or Catholic, nationalist or unionist. The 1998 Good Friday Agreement (GFA) and the Northern Ireland Act reflect the triumph of this new, alternative social narrative, and today consent and consultation are key components of Northern Ireland's new political institutions. To reference Churchill's comments from above, while the 'quarrel' over the political status of Northern Ireland remains deeply entrenched, the institutions of the province have been profoundly altered.

The second key factor is the effect that the conflict had on the behavior of political actors, at both the individual and organizational level. At an individual level, the leadership cohort from the Catholic civil rights movement in the 1960s was clearly engaged in 'high-risk activity', and consistent with findings on civil rights activists in the United States, that generation of leadership stayed active in progressive politics and community organizing decades later.[110] Today, many of the most vocal proponents for migrant's rights have roots in the Catholic civil rights movement of the 1960s. At the organizational level, one of the most enduring

---

[110] See McAdam 1990.

legacies of the Troubles is the complete restructuring of civil society, particularly the relationship between voluntary organizations and the state. Under the old 'Stormont' system that existed prior to the Troubles, Catholics came to view the distribution of public goods as overtly sectarian, and the unequal allocation of public housing was a particular area of contention due to overcrowding in Catholic neighborhoods. During the conflict, these areas became no-go zones for the state, particularly in the poor and working-class neighborhoods of Belfast and Derry. To fill this vacuum, community organizations, often with support from the British government, took over many of the functions that were traditionally the province of the state. Subsequently, with the retreat of the state, and the expansion of the voluntary sector, not only did the distribution of public goods and services became mission-driven rather than explicitly sectarian, but community organizations became active players in the region's volatile politics. Therefore, by the time that immigrants began streaming into Northern Ireland in the late 90s and early 00s, there was both a neighborhood-based service infrastructure in place that was established to insure that native marginalized communities had access to both public services and public officials, and a cadre of community leaders ready, willing, and very able to not only engage with new immigrants directly, but to challenge the state on their behalf.

Taken together, the North's new post-conflict political institutions and the structure and political orientation of civil society inadvertently create the ideal conditions for incorporative activity targeting migrants. The province's new

political institutions put a statutory duty on the regional government to both monitor and address issues of social and political exclusion for all minority groups, not just the 'traditional' minority group in Northern Irish society, Catholics. In addition, migrants have native political allies in a community sector that is reflexively willing to speak up on behalf of politically, economically, and socially marginalized communities. And many local political actors, particularly in Catholic communities, are able to use the historical narrative they developed to articulate their own concerns about political marginalization and exclusion in the past, to justify pushing for the political and social inclusion of immigrants in the present. Therefore, despite the fact that Northern Ireland is a 'new destination' for migrants, it has some of the key characteristics that facilitate incorporative activity in 'old destinations': established institutions to foster the political and social inclusion of linguistically and culturally distinct minority groups, politically embedded community organizations that see migrants as a valued constituency, and a historical narrative that helps natives articulate and justify why newcomers should be included in civic life.

This is not to say that things are all rainbows and roses for immigrants living in Northern Ireland. In some areas, sectarianism has morphed into racism with distressing ease. Immigrants have been subjected to harassment on the streets, and in the worst cases, have been intimidated out of their homes – a sad echo of the darkest days of sectarian strife in the 1960s and 1970s. In the 2000s, Belfast was

increasingly mentioned as 'the race hate capital of Europe'[111], and a well-publicized 2009 attack on Roma immigrants living in South Belfast did little to enhance the city's reputation. But in Northern Ireland, community groups keep a close watch for potential flare-ups, community pressure and statutory obligations force politicians and local officials to address these concerns, and there are an array of legal options that both native and migrant-led organizations can utilize in order to ensure that immigrants have both the opportunity to be a part of civic live and to have their needs taken into account in the policy-making process.

The chapter proceeds in five sections. Section one describes the exclusionary nature of the political institutions established at the time of Northern Ireland's creation, the local political actors that supported and opposed these institutions, and how this situation became untenable by the 1960s. Section two explains how the new post-conflict political institutions of the province were developed, and their effect on political participation and representation. Section three traces the rise of immigration in the wake of the peace process, explores the extent of incorporative activity in reaction to new migration, and shows how the legacy of the conflict has shaped this activity. Section four briefly considers the unique role of Irish nationalists in the process of incorporation. Section V offers a brief discussion of the Northern Ireland case's implications.

---

[111] "Race hate on rise in NI", *BBC News Online*, January 13, 2004, available online at: http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/northern_ireland/3390249.stm.

I. Conflict and Chaos: The Rise and Fall of the Stormont Regime

Northern Ireland was conceived out of sectarian concerns, born out of sectarian mobilization, and run on strictly sectarian lines. From its borders to its electoral institutions, the province was designed to protect Protestant social, economic, and political privilege. Over time, this situation became increasingly untenable, as the post-war expansion of the welfare state spawned two key groups: a new generation of civic-minded middle-class Catholics who got their economic and political footing in the newly expanded civil service, and grassroots neighborhood organizations determined to get their share of newly available public resources. By the 1960s, a Catholic civil rights movement emerged that threatened to upset the balance of power in the province. Tensions escalated through the decade, but an inability to generate reform within Northern Ireland, or impose it from London, led to chaos and the eventual collapse of the province's political institutions. It also profoundly shaped the political identity of a generation of activists, agitators, and combatants. Taken together, the rise and fall of the province's political institutions, and the baptism by fire of its emergent political leadership would, after years of bloodshed, set the stage for a 'new' Northern Ireland.

Building Stormont

As detailed in the previous chapter, the driving issue in Irish politics since the 18th century has been the 'national question', namely the nature of Ireland's political status vis-à-vis the United Kingdom. The fight over the 'national question'

came to a head in 1920 with the push to create a corner of the island that would remain part of the United Kingdom, regardless of what happened in the rest of Ireland. This entity, which came to be known as Northern Ireland, consisted of six out of the nine counties in Ulster. The decision to designate Northern Ireland as a six-county province, rather than using the traditional nine-county Ulster border was a direct result of the need on the part of Protestants – who were overwhelmingly, but not exclusively unionist - to maintain a numerical majority that would have been lost if the traditional boundaries of Ulster were maintained. This gerrymandering did not go unnoticed by nationalists, who voiced their opposition to partition in Parliament:

> We are told that there is a homogeneous Ulster. So the homogeneous six counties are to be created a separate State and cut off from the rest of Ireland! What are the facts about three of these Ulster counties, the three that lie together, and are coterminous with what is called Southern Ireland? There is the county of Tyrone, which has a Nationalist majority of 15,365. There is county Fermanagh, which has a Nationalist—or call it Catholic, if you like—majority of 7,644. It is proposed that these two counties are to have a kind of self-determination, that the minority in these two counties are to rule the majority, and that the majority in these two counties is to be placed in the position of a permanent minority in a Parliament where they get practically no representation.
>
> I put it to Englishmen, who have a reputation for being sportsmen, and men who like to see fair play; is it fair on any constitutional ground that two counties, having an absolute majority of the population, ought to be put into an assembly where they never by any chance can have their rights asserted, and where they will be subject to the bitterest and most bigoted government that could ever be set up—of men who have stated in this House during this Debate that never would they coalesce with their brother Irishmen?[112]

Despite this opposition, Northern Ireland came into existence in 1922, when the six counties voted to 'opt out' of the newly created Irish Free State (later the Republic of Ireland) and remain part of the United Kingdom.

---

[112] 127 H.C. Deb. 31 March 1920 col. 1309

Once the union with Britain was firmly established, and a great degree of

political autonomy granted by London, the worst fears of nationalists were realized.

First, the districting and electoral institutions of the new province were re-designed

to maintain a unionist majority. Prior to partition, the British government had

implemented a system of proportional representation, which meant that even

minority parties would gain a presence in the legislature.[113] Much of the impetus

for these electoral reforms stemmed from the fact that, outside of Ulster, unionists

were under-represented in both local and national politics. With proportional

representation, they could not only gain seats in areas like Dublin and Cork where

there were still clusters of unionist supporters, but the political support for Sinn

Féin could be diluted. However, proportional representation also meant that

nationalists, as the largest minority group in Ulster, would also achieve greater

representation; subsequently Ulster unionists in Parliament were bitterly opposed

to the implementation of proportional representation on an all-Ireland basis. Their

opposition did not go unremarked upon by John Redmond, one of the leaders of the

Home Rule movement and the head of the Irish Parliamentary Party (IPP) who

noted that:

> The minority [unionists] in the rest of Ireland demand and ought to get fair
> representation. Once, however, the minority of Ulster is thought about, once it is
> suggested that the minority of Ulster [nationalists], which is a larger minority than

---

[113] In proportional representation (PR) systems, seats in a legislature are allocated based on
the preferences of voters. For example, if in a voting district, 35% of voters support the
Green Party, the Greens would win roughly 1/3 of the seats. However, if seats are allocated
based on winning a simple majority (i.e. 50% +1), the Greens would never get into
government, because they would never cross the 50% threshold. See Lijphart 1994 and
Cohen 1997 for an in-depth analysis of how voting systems affect the representation of
minority interests.

that of the Unionists in the South and West of Ireland, should have as equal and fair representation as the minority in the South, then the cry is heard, "Hands off Ulster!"...That is the very kernel of the opposition to this Bill by Members from the North of Ireland. Let the minority in the South of Ireland, because they belong to one political persuasion, have fair representation! But the minority in the North of Ireland, in Belfast, Derry, and Tyrone, must ever and always be ground down by the Ulster ascendancy, and we, they say, shall never allow them to have their proper and fair representation! We who come from Ireland know only too well the real opposition to this Bill. It is this: Hon. Members opposite know that under proportional representation in is quite possible, nay, probable, that the majority of the people in Derry City, who are Nationalists, will for the first time come into their proper representation. They also know that the people in the county of Tyrone – a division of which I had the honour to represent for several years in this House – will also come into their own. They do not care two straws whether the Unionists of Dublin – or Waterford, for that matter – get representation so long as the Nationalists of Belfast, Derry, and Tyrone do not get their fair share. That is the kernel and the essence of the Ulster opposition.[114]

However, the new post-partition government implemented a 'first past the post' electoral system, meaning that representatives only needed a simple majority of votes to win office. In addition, voting rights were limited to those that owned property or were heads of households, rather than by individual adult.[115] This put Catholics at a disadvantage, as they were more likely to live in overcrowded, multi-generational households and less likely to own businesses and property than their Protestant counterparts. These electoral restrictions, combined with pro-unionist gerrymandering, insured that unionist politicians were over-represented in both local government and the new regional legislature that came to be known as Stormont. The effect of this institutional change was most visible in predominately nationalist areas such as Derry; by 1967, although unionists only won 32.1% of the votes in local elections, they gained 60% of the seats (O Dochartaigh 2005).

[114] HC Deb.1919, vol. 114 cc99-183.
[115] 'One man, one vote' was a key slogan of civil rights campaigners.

This discrepancy did not escape the attention of the British government. The 1969 'Cameron Report', commissioned by the government to detail the rising social unrest in Northern Ireland, noted:

> ... it must be kept in view that since the setting up of the Government of Northern Ireland under the Government of Ireland Act 1920 one political party has been continuously in power [the Ulster Unionist Party]. Not only so, but there has not so far been developed any united parliamentary opposition, dedicated basically to support the existing constitution, which upon any view has been at any time in a position to present itself as a possible alternative government. We are not concerned, and could not properly be concerned, with the reasons for this situation, but we record the fact, because it is impossible to appreciate the immediate as well as the underlying causes of the outbreaks which we have to consider without having regard to the fact that in Northern Ireland the possibility of any organised Opposition becoming the alternative Government has not so far been one which was in any sense a reality. An Opposition which can never become a Government tends to lose a sense of responsibility and a party in power which can never (in foreseeable circumstances) be turned out tends to be complacent and insensitive to criticism or acceptance of any need for change or reform (Chapter 1, section 7).[116]

It should also be noted that the unionist dominance of regional politics was aided by Catholic apathy and the deliberate decision of many nationalists to abstain from Northern Irish politics altogether. Consistent with the abstentionist policies of early twentieth century republicans, hardline republican families with historical ties to the Irish Republican Army (IRA), were particularly opposed to legitimizing British political institutions through their presence in what they saw as illegitimate legislative bodies.[117]

---

[116] 1969. "Disturbances in Northern Ireland: Report of the Commission appointed by the Governor of Northern Ireland". The findings of the report are consistent with the literature on contentious politics: if people feel that their grievances cannot or will not be address via electoral or legislative politics, they may take to the streets instead; see Piven and Cloward 1977; Tarrow 1998.

[117] Hardline republicans even today deny the legitimacy of both the governments in Stormont and the Dáil. Instead, they see their demands for a unified Irish republic in the

The systematic exclusion of Catholics from the region's politics, and the abstentionist policies of hardline republicans left the Catholic community without effective political representation for decades. Northern Ireland was essentially a one-party unionist state. As one observer noted, "At Stormont nationalism had found itself excluded from power, office and influence like some orphan child gazing into a brightly lit and furnished shop window" (Bloomfield 2007). This situation was exacerbated by the fact that there were few alternative political organizations beyond parties that were open to Catholics. One example is trade unions: traditionally, the unionized industrial jobs in the shipyards and heavy manufacturing industries that buoyed the regional economy were the almost exclusive province of Protestants, as Catholics had been ejected from the Belfast shipyards amidst an increase in sectarian violence in the 1920s.[118] In addition, due to the sectarian nature of the region's politics, religious community organizing as a means of affecting policy was also not an option; attempts at ecumenical cross-community reform in the early 1960s petered out, largely due to fears from unionist organizations, most notably the Protestant fraternal organization the Loyal Orange Institution, commonly known as the Orange Order:

> And just as the proponents of ecumenism saw a connection between increased religious tolerance and a breakdown of political barriers, many Protestants feared that what was on the agenda was what they interpreted as 'surrender'. Such fears were expressed by the Grand Master of the Independent Orange Order, W. J. McClure, quoted in the Irish Weekly, the Irish News's weekend publication, of 21 July 1962: 'Rome is therefore unchanged and carries in her the same spirit of evil as

model of the First Dáil Éireann as declared by Patrick Pearse in the 1916 proclamation as the only legitimate form of government in Ireland.

[118] See Munck 1985 and Ó Murchú 2005 for an analysis of ethnic politics and organized labor in Belfast.

in the days of her greater power to torment the saints. Others may compromise, and shake hands with this hellish institution, but we of the Independent Orange Order will never bow the knee" (Purdie 1990, 20-21).

Therefore, by mid-century, Catholics found themselves largely locked out of meaningful participation in the public life of Northern Ireland.

Interestingly, it may have been the expansion of the post-war welfare state that in turn sparked Catholic mobilization. O Dochartaigh notes that the growth of the welfare state in the post-war era had two key effects on state-society relations. First, the British government's decision to delegate the distribution of public goods to a sectarian local government further deepened Catholic grievances, as the distribution of public housing, in particular, was seen as biased towards Protestants. Subsequently, tenants organizations began appearing in the 1950s and 60s as a means of both securing housing and ensuring that it was properly maintained. Secondly, the overall expansion of the state created a need for a larger civil service; these jobs provided a springboard for many upwardly mobile Catholics into the middle class. This new pool of young professionals would become deeply involved in the emergent Catholic civil rights movement (O Dochartaigh 2005).

Stormont and its Discontents

By the 1960s, the situation in Northern Ireland seemed increasingly untenable. Due to rising political confidence and a growing level of grievance, Catholics began organizing in order to demand social, political and economic rights. This challenge to the established order, along with the attempted reforms of the O'Neill administration (1963-1969) provoked alarm amongst Protestants, many of

who saw any gains in the Catholic community as a potential threat to the traditionally dominant political and socioeconomic position of their community.[119] Tensions finally boiled over in 1968, a 'hot' year across much of Western Europe, and by 1969, the region had collapsed into bloody warfare.

Up until the 1960s, as noted, Catholics lacked effective political representation, for both institutional and internal reasons. However, the black civil rights movement in the United States gave the emergent Catholic leadership, particularly in and around Derry, a framework for which to make claims on the state. In the United States, groups like the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC) and the Student Non-Violent Coordinating Committee (SNCC) made basic but powerful claims to equal citizenship rights under U.S. law. Although claims to full citizenship resonated for many Catholics in Northern Ireland, this was a risky strategy due to the republican policy of abstention: to make claims for citizenship-based rights was to essentially acknowledge one's status as a British citizen. For many Catholics who identified strongly with the republican tradition, this was a step too far.

Despite this ambivalence, the situation in the North, and particularly in Derry and Belfast, had reached a breaking point and activists were ready for change. The situation in Derry was a particular sore point, for unlike Belfast, it was a majority-nationalist city – yet nationalists were largely excluded from civic

---

[119] In addition to pushing for economic reforms, Captain O'Neill (who was also the head of the Ulster Unionist Party) visited Catholic sites, and met with the Taoiseach (prime minister) of the Republic, Seán Lemass. This public fraternization with Catholics was unprecedented, and became increasingly controversial, particularly among members of the Orange Order.

life. A 1965 report from the Campaign for Social Justice highlighted the main concerns of the nationalist community in and around Derry: 1) political gerrymandering that left nationalists grossly under-represented, 2) discrimination in housing development and allocation, 3) discrimination in local government hiring and compensation practices, and 4) discrimination in the allocation of public resources for economic development projects. The report cited several key figures to bolster their claims: although Catholics outnumbered Protestants in Londonderry by a 2:1 ratio, 1) only 32 out of 177 employees of the Derry County government were Catholics, and 2) only eight out of twenty councilors were nationalist. In addition, while there was no wait for public housing in the Protestant community, over 2,000 Catholics were on a waiting list (Campaign for Social Justice 1965).

It is within this context that groups such as the Northern Ireland Civil Rights Association (NICRA) and the Derry Citizen's Action Committee (DCAC) emerged to demand equal housing rights and a greater say in civic affairs. Notables from this era include John Hume of the DCAC, and later a co-founder of the nationalist Social Democratic and Labor Party (SDLP), Eamonn McCann, a NICRA co-founder and prominent socialist activist, and Bernadette Devlin who burst onto the scene from the emergent student's rights movement out of Queen's University Belfast. This generation of leadership represented the new face of Catholic political leadership around the 'national question', one that looked to constitutional means rather than political violence. Hume would go on to lead the SDLP through numerous elections and later the peace process, and Devlin would go on to win (and,

contrary to traditional republican practice, take) a seat in Westminster, becoming the youngest female MP in British history.

This new leadership cadre engaged in direct confrontation with the Stormont regime, primarily through clashes with the Royal Ulster Constabulary (RUC) and the auxiliary security forces, known as the B-Specials. The RUC, which already had a terrible reputation among Catholics as a biased police force, confirmed the community's worst fears when they allowed civil rights marchers to be attacked by Protestant mobs, or worse yet, set upon protesters themselves. Perhaps the most notorious incident of RUC violence against civil rights protestors took place in Derry in October 1968, when officers clubbed peaceful protestors – including two Westminster MPs.[120]

Under normal circumstances, in non-violent protest movements, street actions are designed to draw a disproportionate response from the state, thus leading to more public support for the cause. This was an extremely successful tactic in the U.S.: the images of police in Birmingham and Selma attacking peaceful protesters sparked a wave of national and international sympathy for the demands of the movement. Initially, the Catholic civil rights movement had a similar effect: the video of RUC officers beating peaceful protesters in Derry made international headlines and galvanized the nationalist community at home and the large Irish diaspora abroad. However, the problem for civil rights activists in Northern Ireland was that they had to contend with the ongoing internal tension between those committed to constitutional means versus Ireland's long history of physical force

---

[120] These incidents were also detailed in the Cameron report.

republicanism. As state-sanctioned violence on the part of the RUC and Loyalist neighborhood 'defense associations' grew, the ability of the Catholic civil rights leadership to maintain a non-retaliatory, non-violent approach declined, and force increasingly seemed like the only viable response. Matters were not helped by intransigence among some hardline unionist leaders, who within the context of the "zero-sum" mindset of the region's politics, saw any concession to Catholics as the first step on a slippery slope towards Dublin (and Papal) rule.

The breaking point for the Catholic community came in the summer of 1969, which saw intense sectarian rioting across the province. The 'Battle of the Bogside' in Derry, a sustained confrontation between the RUC and Catholic residents, and the Bombay Street riots in Belfast, which saw the RUC stand by while Protestant mobs burned hundreds of Catholic families out of their homes, were enough to convince many Catholics, and in particular republicans, that constitutional means were not enough: Catholics would never be secure in a British-controlled Ireland. Thus, the 'Provisional' movement was born: young Catholics took up arms against the RUC (and later the British army) and formed what would come to be known as the Provisional Irish Republican Army (PIRA). The 'Troubles' had officially begun.

The Informal Civil Service: The Rise of the Community Sector

The conflict known as 'the Troubles' lasted for three decades and cost over 3,500 lives, but the deadliest years were from 1971-1976.[121] As a result of the chaos,

---

[121] Sutton Index of Deaths

London disbanded Stormont and implemented direct rule in 1972, eventually stripping the local government of administrative and political responsibilities and putting the Northern Ireland Office (NIO) in charge of major policy and administrative initiatives of the province. During this time, the British government and the NIO attempted to introduce a series of reforms, known as 'the Sunningdale Agreement', that were meant to address issues of political power-sharing and consultation. However, the proposals were met with disdain from republicans and stiff resistance from the unionist community, and were summarily dropped.

Subsequently, the burden of governing in Northern Ireland shifted away from elected officials to the civil service, and policies were developed and administered from the NIO. However, the elimination of the Stormont regime failed to eliminate suspicion of the British government, particularly in republican strongholds. Administrators were at a loss: on the one hand, Catholic communities were historically under-served by local government, and this had fuelled much of the conflict. On the other hand, these now paramilitary-controlled republican heartlands were no-go zones for British government officials. How could the state make inroads into these communities, provide services, and perhaps in the process engage in a 'hearts and minds' campaign that could possibly soften community sentiment?

Starting in the late 1960s, the British government enacted a series of what came to be known as 'community relations' schemes as a means of managing conflict, particularly in deeply sectarian areas. In an interesting parallel to

immigration matters, these efforts were seen as an incorporation mechanism: "This meant for the first time in its history the Northern Ireland statelet would attempt to incorporate the Republican/Nationalist/Catholic community" (McVeigh 2002). Through the UK government, funding was made available for community-based groups to engage in social service provision, women's groups, social clubs, and youth activities.

Critics note that the funding system, like everything else in Northern Ireland, was heavily politicized: only 'acceptable' groups (i.e. moderate nationalists or groups with no links to paramilitary organizations) would be eligible for support. More specifically, the community relations agenda promoted and supported project that had a cross-community focus, rather than an internal (i.e. single community) community-building focus. However, it is the internal processes that, some have argued, 'opened up' insular inner-city working class communities to wider political participation: " the activities of the capillaries of civil society in the working class communities of Northern Ireland have helped to improve the morale and increase the confidence of these communities" (Lister 1998). Single-community work in other areas (with women and the queer community being two key groups) also had a key confidence-building function; women's groups in particular would come to play a small but significant role in the 1990s peace process. Confidence is a key component of community relations, particularly in Northern Ireland, and as we shall see, community confidence would play a significant role in shaping how local actors responded to new immigration.

Ironically, it was in the most deprived communities that were shut out of government assistance where the most radical community work took place. Most notable was West Belfast, where self-help groups proliferated in the republican Falls Road area in the absence of the state. These were groups created by Irish republicans for Irish republicans, but they were not insular; the republican movement's ties to other nationalist movements (such as the Basques of Northern Spain), anti-apartheid groups, and civil rights organizations have given Belfast's republican activist community, in particular, an international, universalist outlook on political, civil, and human rights.[122] As it did for Sinn Féin in the early twentieth century, and for the Catholic Civil Rights movement in the 1960s, looking abroad to understand the struggles of other marginalized people helped republicans to better understand and frame their own situation at home.

In contrast, due to both differences in state-society relations and internal differences between the two communities, community organizing has been less robust in loyalist heartlands. This is in part because loyalists traditionally saw the state as a legitimate force in society, and felt no need to set up parallel institutions. In addition, as previously noted, loyalist communities benefited politically and materially from the old Stormont regime. Third, the Protestant community is not

---

[122] Today, this international agenda immediately greets any newcomer to the Falls Road, as a block long wall of murals declare the community's solidarity with Basques, Catalans, political prisoners, Cubans, and other marginalized groups. Murals play a particularly important symbolic role in Northern Ireland. Traditionally, they have been used to 'take the temperature' of a given community, or to signal its political discontent. Murals, graffiti, curb-painting, and flags are also used to mark the territory of hardline republican or loyalist housing estates, and during the Troubles were used to signal what paramilitary organization controlled a particular area. See Appendix D at the end of this chapter for examples.

homogeneous; there have long been divisions between Anglicans and Presbyterians and between the inner-city working class and the upper classes who lived in the leafy suburbs overlooking Belfast. Even the paramilitary movement was fractured; internecine feuds between loyalists both during and after the Troubles were particularly deadly, and loyalist communities lack the history of shared grievance that fosters community cohesion in Catholic communities. Subsequently, as the region's institutions opened up, and Catholics took on a greater role in the public life of the province, many Protestant communities suffered a crisis of confidence. Later, as we will see, this lack of confidence would come to the fore when inner-city Protestant communities were faced with the challenge of new immigration.

Conclusion

The rise and fall of the Stormont regime had a profound effect on the politics of Northern Ireland, both on its institutions and its key actors. The dire political and social position of Catholics in the run-up to the Troubles highlighted the multiple failures of the era's political institutions. The articulation of that social position in the face of extreme political and legal hostility forged the views of a generation of Catholic activists. And the collapse of local government and the subsequent expansion of the role of the voluntary sector gave NGOs a privileged place within local politics.

However, the collapse of Stormont left a huge hole in the politics of the region. Given the problems of the past, clearly more inclusive institutions were in

order. But what should they look like? And who should have a say in the 'new' Northern Ireland? We now turn to the next section, which explores how key stakeholders, many of whom were sworn enemies, came together to rebuild Northern Ireland's political institutions from the ground up, and in the process, created some of the most progressive minority rights laws in the world.

II. Old Battles, New Institutions: Peace and the New Northern Ireland

As the stark violence of the 1970s subsided into the protracted, low-level phase of the Troubles known as the 'Long War', elected officials, bureaucrats, and community organizations set about on the long process of rebuilding the region's political institutions so as to not only bring about an end to violence, but to insure that such a conflict would be less likely to erupt in the future. While the main preoccupations of the peace negotiators were bringing an end to paramilitary activity and finding a way for both sides to 'agree to disagree' on the national question, the community sector focused on coming to an agreement that would ensure a broadly inclusive future for everyone, not just those who identified as being republicans or loyalists. The inclusion of small parties such as the Northern Ireland Women's Coalition, and the input from the vibrant community sector served to open the language of the agreement beyond the 'two communities' basis to instead focus on universal human rights and special consideration for minority groups, whether Catholic, gays, or racial minorities. This led to the development of Section 75 within the 1998 Northern Ireland Act, which explicitly mandates that

every public body in the province develop an equality plan that lays out how it will address the needs of diverse groups within Northern Irish society. While the 'equality agenda' is extremely contentious, the loud and open debates about it and the state's role in furthering (or inhibiting) it have created an opening for minority groups to air their grievances and demand that both the civil service and elected officials pay attention to their specific needs.

Therefore, by the 1990s, a completely new institutional environment had been created in Northern Ireland, one that was meant to insure broader community representation and consent than the old Stormont regime. While the nature of these new institutions is still contested today, they provide the key operating guidelines for political parties, voluntary associations, and the civil service. Over time, they would come to provide key guidelines for how to respond to new immigrants as well.

New Electoral Institutions

By the late 1980s, it was obvious to all parties that a clear military victory was impossible, and it was time to negotiate. While constitutional means to settle the 'national question' were central to peace negotiations, both the British government and the community sector were well aware that the new institutions governing both electoral politics and civil society had to be designed in a way to both allow for inclusion of multiple groups and traditions, but that also recognized differences.

The new electoral institutions permanently did away with majoritarian 'first past the post' voting for local elections and instead reverted to the proportional representation-single transferable vote (PR-STV) system, thus creating room not only for small parties and independent candidates to enter the system, but also guaranteeing some degree of minority interest representation.[123] During the intermittent local elections during direct rule, and in post-1996 elections, the STV system created space for alternative parties, such as Alliance, a non-sectarian party dedicated to cross-community mobilization and economically liberal policy, and the Progressive Unionist Party (PUP), a small unionist party made up of working-class loyalists with ties to the Ulster Volunteer Force (UVF), a paramilitary organization. The Northern Ireland Women's Coalition (NIWC), although short-lived, was another 'alternative' cross-community party, dedicated to breaking the 'two-communities' paradigm of the peace talks. Therefore, although the central axis for political relations still turned on the nationalist-unionist divide, the new electoral institutions that evolved out of the peace process created some space for 'third-way' parties to have a say in the region's politics.

Institutionalizing Equality – State-society relations under the GFA

Beyond electoral institutions, there was still another question: inequality. It should be noted that, prior to the mid-1990s, there were no laws in Northern Ireland governing minority rights. Despite watershed legislation enacted in the UK

---

[123] Consistent with the rest of the UK, elections to Westminster still use the single-member district first-past-the-post system.

during the 1960s, at the behest of a unionist political leadership fearful of Catholic claims, Northern Ireland was left exempt from fair employment and race relations legislation (Geoghegan 2010). According to Geoghegan, this was the modus operandi of the NIO for much of the 1970s and 80s: "The notion that Northern Ireland had neither minorities nor the need for any form of race-based anti-discrimination legislation remained the dominant position within the corridors of the Northern Ireland Office" (41).

Unhappy with the myopic focus on religious-based discrimination only, and mindful of developments on the other side of the Irish Sea, a variety of community organizations began to mobilize around the idea of a more expansive anti-discrimination regime. At a minimum, groups sought the same legal protections that were available in other parts of the UK, although by the 1990s, a nascent race-based movement led by the Northern Ireland Council for Ethnic Minorities (NICEM) explicitly demanded legislation that dealt with race, not just sectarianism. The growing demands from the region's small but growing minority population coincided with a series of demands for inclusion from a number of other social groups who fell outside of the 'two communities' sectarian model: women's organizations, gay activists, and disability rights groups all pushed for a more universal language of human rights to be included in the new institutions of the province.

After years of negotiations, and some last-minute maneuvering, on April 10, 1998, representatives from the British and Irish governments, and Northern Irish

political parties announced the peace accord that came to be know as the Good

Friday Agreement (alternately the 'Belfast Agreement', heretofore referred to as

'the Agreement' or the 'GFA'). Although it was clearly designed to address how the

two communities could come to a constitutional agreement on the 'national

question', it notably put equality at the center of the governing principles of the new

Northern Ireland:

> We are committed to partnership, equality and mutual respect as the basis of
> relationships within Northern Ireland, between North and South, and between these
> islands. [Article I, Section 3].
>
> ...affirm that whatever choice is freely exercised by a majority of the people of
> Northern Ireland, the power of the sovereign government with jurisdiction there
> shall be exercised with rigorous impartiality on behalf of all the people in the
> diversity of their identities and traditions and shall be founded on the principles of
> full respect for and equality of, civil, political, social and cultural rights, of freedom
> from discrimination for all citizens, and of parity of esteem and of just and equal
> treatment for the identity, ethos and aspirations of both communities [Article 2,
> Section 1(v)].[124]

The language of the GFA is notable because it reflects both the alternative

social narrative put forth by the Catholic civil rights movement some thirty-plus

years before, and the social ideals espoused in the 1916 Proclamation. However, it

was also controversial, particularly among hardline republicans, because it

essentially "copper-fastened" Northern Ireland to the United Kingdom: by letting

the people of Northern Ireland have final say over the status question by a majority

vote, just as it did in 1920, the British and Irish governments effectively closed off

the pathway to reunification for at least another generation.

---

[124] The GFA is available online at: http://cain.ulst.ac.uk/events/peace/docs/agreement.pdf.
CAIN, the host, is a major database of conflict-related documents and memorabilia from
Northern Ireland.

Citizens of both Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland voted to approve the GFA in 1998, which was essentially an accord meant to mark an end to the conflict and lay out the key principles upon which a new institutional order could be founded. However, the main legislation that set out not only the principles but the statutory requirements for the new Northern Ireland was the Northern Ireland Act of 1998 (heretofore referred to as 'the Act'). As with any such legislation, the devil lies in the details. But the details of the Act are where things get interesting.

The Northern Ireland Act of 1998 was designed to provide structure to the ideals set out in the GFA. Much of the Act is dedicated to the structure of the province's political institutions, which include provisions for cross-community consent, oversight, and occasional veto-power. However, perhaps the most far-reaching and revolutionary part of the Act is Section 75, which puts a statutory duty on public authorities to:

> ...in carrying out its functions relating to Northern Ireland have due regard to the need to promote equality of opportunity between persons of different religious belief, political opinion, racial group, age, marital status or sexual orientation; between men and women generally; between persons with a disability and persons without; and between persons with dependents and persons without. (a-d).

According to the Equality Commission of Northern Ireland, the original intent behind Section 75 was to "radically overhaul the process of policy-making and to create profound change in the administration of government and public authorities. It was meant to make a difference to public life and to the lives of people" (2007, 4). Given the sweeping language of the statute, some community activists noted their surprise that there was not more resistance to its inclusion. However, ambiguity

can be a boon to interested political actors: "institutional rules are subject to varying interpretations and levels of enforcement and therefore exhibit ambiguities that provide space for interested agents to exploit in their effort to alter them" (Mahoney and Thelen 2010). Given the proliferation of parties, community organizations, and new bureaucracies in the run-up to the peace agreement, there was no shortage of 'interested agents', and the unintended consequences of Section 75 would profoundly affect how the community sector and the bureaucracy would respond to new immigration.

Conclusion

By the end of the 1990s, Northern Ireland was a completely different place that it had been seventy – or even thirty - years earlier, both in terms of its political institutions and its main political actors.

The most obvious changes involved the province's formal political institutions. Electoral rules could no longer be used to exclude, and the post-GFA institutions were designed to encourage a competitive, multi-party democracy. Citizens were granted oversight and input into the operation of key government agencies, including the police.[125] And the new post-conflict laws made it a statutory duty for government agencies to take necessary steps to accommodate the needs of minority groups. Embedded in these new institutions were the predominant social

---

[125] Because of clashes between the RUC and the nationalist community prior to and during the Troubles, and the targeting of RUC officers by the IRA during the Troubles, policing has historically been one of the most contentious issues in Northern Ireland.

narratives of both the Catholic civil rights movement and of unionists fearful of becoming a political and religious minority.

However, the political institutions of Northern Ireland would not have changed so significantly without changes among its key political actors. The Catholic community is now mobilized and active in politics, through both the community sector and political parties. Even republicans, for the first time, are deeply engaged in Northern Ireland's legislative politics. The regional bureaucracy has shifted from one that served the needs of the sectarian state, to one that serves the needs of the population, and is required by law to accommodate difference. Finally, today's Northern Ireland has a robust associational life, particularly in inner-city working class areas that were traditionally economically and socially deprived.

This is not to say that things in the North are perfect. Community workers and small parties have complained of a 'sectarian carve-up', with Sinn Féin and the Democratic Unionist Party (DUP) negotiating power between them with little time for anyone else. Ironically, these were the two parties that were tied to the most militant wings of the nationalist and unionist movements; the DUP, under the leadership of the Reverend Ian Paisley, actively campaigned against the GFA. Educational and residential segregation is rife, and the province has the highest levels of welfare dependency and lowest rates of workforce participation in the UK (CENI 2003). Sectarian violence still rears its ugly head, especially during the contentious summer 'marching season' when Protestant fraternal lodges celebrate

past military victories over Catholics. But the province has changed enormously: in the 1990s, nobody would have believed that Martin McGuinness, an ex-IRA commander, and Ian Paisley, a firebrand unionist rabble-rouser, would not only serve as the duly elected co-leaders of the regional government, but that they would get along famously, earning the media nickname 'The Chuckle Brothers".

Increasingly, the outside world has taken notice of the internal changes in Northern Ireland. Investors are pouring in; there are shiny new buildings along the Belfast skyline. Tourism is on the rise, and the province is becoming a favorite weekend holiday destination within the UK and Ireland. But perhaps the most visible reminder that the world's view of Northern Ireland has changed is the fact that, for the first time in its modern history, people from around the world are actually choosing to live, work, and settle there. We now turn to their story.

III: Re-Imagining Communities: Migrant Political Incorporation, Nordy-Style

As the Troubles wound down, the region became increasingly attractive to investors. It also became attractive to immigrants. From 1997 to 2010, the migrant population increased fourfold. This influx of new residents raised concerns about political incorporation: in a place that was still trying to figure out what state-society relations should look like among natives, what would incorporation of outsiders actually look like? Is incorporative activity even possible in a society as divided as Northern Ireland's?

The short answer is, yes, but not uniformly. Using Andersen's key metrics of the 'tasks' of immigrant political incorporation as a guideline, I examine incorporative activity in two key areas: encouraging inclusion in electoral politics, and education and resource development (what I will call 'capacity-building').[126] My analysis of incorporative activity around electoral politics focuses on two key areas: 1) migrant voter registration campaigns, and 2) recruitment of migrant candidates. For capacity building, I examine three key streams of incorporative activities: 1) educational outreach to teach new arrivals about formal and informal civic institutions, 2) migrant organizational capacity building via strategic partnerships and/or financial support, and 3) assumption of an intermediary role between new arrivals and the state and new arrivals and local residents.[127]

My findings indicate that there is much more incorporative activity around migrant capacity building than through electoral mobilization. Given the nature of party politics in Northern Ireland, this is not particularly surprising: the Northern Ireland Assembly was not fully reinstated until 2007, and parties are still making the adjustment from dealing primarily with political violence to having to manage and create policies that address more mundane political issues such as budgeting

---

[126] Andersen describes the tasks of incorporation as "encouraging and facilitating naturalization, promoting voter registration, educating people about issues and participatory channels, and providing them with the resources and motivations to participate" (2010, 71). I do not include citizenship in this chapter, as this is not an area over which key political actors have any real control over in Northern Ireland. However, I cover the debate over citizenship in the Republic – a fight that included political actors from the North – in Chapter Five. I also consolidate education and resources under the heading of capacity building as both financial support and technical know-how can help propel new immigrant communities into public life; see Bloemraad 2005.

[127] This chapter does not address incorporative activity around citizenship, as this issue is discussed in-depth in Chapter Four.

and snow removal. However, given the levels of social mistrust and isolation in the North, and Northern Ireland's lack of history dealing with migrant populations, the level of engagement is still surprising.

New Institutions, New Immigrants

Not surprisingly, net migration in Northern Ireland was resolutely negative from the early 1970s on through much of the 1990s [see Appendix C]. In 1997, the year before the Good Friday Agreement came into effect, the foreign-born population of the province was approximately 19,000, which was just over 1% of the overall population (NISRA 2010).[128] This population primarily consisted of small pockets of East and South Asians: Hong Kong Chinese and Indians were small business owners (primarily in the restaurant trade), while Filipinos and South Asians were drawn to the region – particularly around Belfast – to work for the National Health Service (NHS).

As the political situation settled, and the economy improved, migration began to pick up during the 1990s. The biggest change came in 2004, when the UK and Ireland granted the new Central and Eastern European accession states of the European Union – known as the 'A8' – access to their labor market; by 2010, the foreign-born were 4.5% of the general population.[129] Poles made up almost half of this group (see Tables 1 & 2).

---

[128] Foreign-born statistics do not include those born in the UK 'mainland' or the Republic of Ireland.
[129] The A8 countries include the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Hungary, Poland, Lithuania, Latvia, Estonia, and Slovenia. These countries initially faced labor market restrictions in

However, the distribution of new immigrants has not been even, both within the UK in general, and Northern Ireland as a region. Within the UK, Northern Ireland has seen one-third more registered A8 workers on a per capita basis than any other region. Within the province, migrants have been disproportionately drawn to two key regions: southwestern agricultural areas where food processing is a booming industry and greater Belfast, where jobs with the NHS and restaurant and tourism industries are a major draw.

Even in the best of cases, immigration presents challenges for the receiving society, and Northern Ireland was no exception. In rural areas, the sudden arrival of work crews numbering in the hundreds could rapidly transform the demographics of a small town; in Dungannon, a town of less than 12,000, the arrival of approximately 400 Portuguese workers over the course of one weekend dramatically changed the local demographics, literally overnight. In Belfast, migrants settled in Protestant areas due to the relative availability of housing; this sparked no small consternation not only because outsiders were moving into local estates, but many of these outsiders were Catholics.[130] Across the region, elected officials, local bureaucracies and community organizations were confronted with the question: who were these people, and what role, if any, would they play in political life?

---

other EU countries with the exception of Sweden, the UK, and Ireland. Malta and Cyprus also joined the EU at this time, but their citizens did not face work restrictions.
[130] Poles and Lithuanians, the main representatives of the A8 countries in the North, are overwhelmingly Catholic.

Electoral Incorporative Activity

Incorporative activity around electoral politics can happen in two key areas: migrant voter registration drives and running migrant candidates in local elections. While electoral incorporative activity has been relatively limited overall, migrants are becoming more visible in party politics – sometimes in troubling ways.

Migrant voter registration

A key aspect of incorporative activity is migrant voter registration. In Northern Ireland, any citizen of the UK, Ireland, a Commonwealth country or the European Union who is at least seventeen years old and has lived in Northern Ireland for at least three months is eligible to be on the electoral register.[131] Once registered, citizens of Ireland, Malta, Cyprus, and the Commonwealth can vote in any UK election, while EU citizen participation is limited to local and EU elections. In recognition of the region's diverse population, in addition to English, Irish, and Ulster Scots, voter registration forms are available in Lithuanian, Polish, Portuguese, Romanian, and Slovak.

Given the geographic origins of migrants living in Northern Ireland, over two-thirds are eligible to vote in local and regional elections. However, migrant voter registration activity was relatively limited for the 2011 local elections. This is consistent with much of the literature on political mobilization: in a world of limited resources, parties have an incentive to focus their turnout efforts on voters who they

---

[131] Voter registration information is available through the Electoral Office for Northern Ireland: http://www.eoni.org.uk/index/registration.htm. While residents can register at age 17, they must be 18 by Election Day in order to vote.

already know are supporters (Rosenstone and Hansen 1993). However, immigrants are generally an unknown political commodity; no immigrant group is associated with a specific party.

Notably, getting parties deeply involved in voter registration drives on both sides of the Irish border has been difficult: because the PR-STV system allows voters to support multiple candidates from different parties, the parties are wary of mobilizing a new, unknown population, as resources spent to get people to register and vote for your party could lead to votes for someone else.[132] Interestingly, this cross-border problem has prompted a cross-border response: inspired by the Dublin City Council migrant voter registration drive in 2009, some migrant community organization leaders in Belfast wanted to set up a similar partnership with the Belfast City Council for the 2011 local elections. However, it remains to be seen whether or not parties will get involved in mass migrant voter mobilization given both immigrants' relatively new entry to the political scene and the institutional constraints on maximizing vote return for efforts expended.

Migrant Candidates

Of the five major parties to contest the 2011 Assembly elections, only two, the SDLP and the Alliance party, had immigrant candidates on the ballot. This was not the first time that the Alliance Party had an immigrant candidate; in 2007, Anna Lo, a Hong Kong native, won an Assembly seat in South Belfast. Lo was previously

---

[132] As detailed in Chapter Five, this was an explicit concern of parties that were not in government at the time: they did not want to spend limited resources on voters who could possibly give transfer votes to what they saw as the opposition.

the chair of the Chinese Welfare Association, a migrant self-help group based in the area that is also at the edge of a major interface zone.[133] Interestingly, despite the concentration of Chinese immigrants in the area, she credits her win to non-ethnic cross-community support; the Chinese at the time were not particularly active voters. However, her win has had an inspirational effect on new immigrants; several migrant-led organizations pointed to Lo as an example of what was possible in Northern Ireland.

Alliance is also unique in that it is the only major party in Stormont to have no official designation as a unionist or nationalist party. In recent years, the party has made a conscious effort to position itself as a third-way alternative to sectarian politics. At times, this has been cause for derision, particularly from some republican activists who characterize the Alliance Party and its supporters as smug, but between the success of Anna Lo and its outspokenness on migrant-related issues, Alliance does present itself as a credible electoral option for new immigrants wary of being aligned with an explicitly sectarian party. By its very presence in the Northern Irish political landscape, Alliance creates space for migrant political participation in a way that no other party in the province does.

The other party with migrant candidates, the SDLP, is an explicitly nationalist party, and is designated as such in Stormont. The SDLP sees itself as a party that could have wider appeal beyond its traditional Catholic base, due to its social democratic policy orientation. In addition, in contrast to Sinn Féin and some

---

[133] Interface zones are areas where a majority nationalist area abuts a majority unionist area. These zones have often been flashpoints for conflict and violence.

unionist parties, it is not tainted by affiliation with paramilitary organizations. However, it has steadily lost vote share to Sinn Féin over the last several years, and is now the smaller of the two main nationalist parties in government.

The SDLP selected three migrant candidates. Two Polish candidates ran for seats in the Northern Ireland Assembly (Stormont): Magdalena Wolska in East Belfast, and Anna Ochal-Molenda in Craigavon Central. Daniel Gouveia, a native of Portugal, stood in the Portadown local council elections. None of the candidates did particularly well – all finished last or close to last in their districts – but Wolska ran in a unionist 'heartland', and the other two ran in districts where the SDLP did poorly overall.

Why did the SDLP decide to run migrant candidates in the last election cycle? There are some unconfirmed reports that the SDLP put migrants on the ballot in an attempt to increase turnout - i.e. a sort of migrant voter registration drive by proxy – but there is not evidence that this works in Northern Ireland: Anna Lo's presence on the ballot has had little effect on minority ethnic voting patterns, despite the fact that South Belfast is one of the more diverse areas of the country. It is notable that the candidates running outside of Belfast were in areas where the SDLP has lost vote share to Sinn Féin over the years; perhaps the recruitment of migrant candidates was an attempt to reclaim lost ground via new migrant voters. But given the voting patterns of these districts (East Belfast, for example, elected three DUP MLAs, and is the power base of Northern Ireland's First Minister and DUP president, Peter Robinson), it is hard to see these migrant candidacies as

anything more than symbolic. That said, in a place where political symbolism is still quite powerful, symbolic actions meant to send a signal about the role of migrants in Northern Irish politics may have some value in and of itself. Symbolic actions are particularly important within the context of societies with a legacy of ethnic violence, for as Kaufman notes, "Effective conflict resolution...requires addressing the emotional and symbolic processes that influence how tangible issues are perceived and how they play out politically" (2006: 202).

When migrants have become prominently featured in party politics, however, it has at times been controversial. In 2008, headlines were made across both Ireland and the UK when Daniel Konieczny, a Polish community worker, was invited by his local MLA, Jeffrey Donaldson of the DUP, to address the party's annual conference. Although it was a surprise that a party with a history of anti-Catholic leadership would ask a Catholic to address its main body,[134] it was truly shocking when, at the conclusion of his statements, Mr. Konieczny shouted "No Surrender!" – or, more accurately, "Nie Poddamy Sie!" - long the catchphrase of unionist hard-liners. The headline in the next day's Irish Times largely summed up the glum opinion of many observers: "Language may be new but the message is depressingly familiar".[135] While Mr. Konieczny's inclusion in DUP politics may be incorporative activity, it is not necessarily the kind of incorporative activity that many in Ireland – North or South – would like to see.

---

[134] The former head of the DUP, Ian Paisley, has repeatedly referred to the Pope as 'the anti-Christ', and during the years of the Troubles developed a reputation as an anti-Catholic bigot.
[135] Gerry Moriarty, "Language may be new but the message is depressingly familiar, *Irish Times* 3 November 2008.

One interesting aspect of the 'No Surrender' incident is the difference in how it was viewed by migrant community activists versus native community activists. The first time I heard the story in an interview, it was recounted by a Eastern European who was clearly dying of shame as she told it; she could not believe that her community was being publicly tied to the policies of the DUP. However, the second time I heard the story it was from an Irishman who could barely tell it for laughing so hard. While the 'No Surrender' incident certainly provided fodder for the province's infamous black humor, it also points to an important fact: aware of the depths of the conflict, many migrant community leaders are quite wary about being lumped as a group into one 'side' or the other. This, however, may be an impossible task; as another migrant community worker noted: "Here, you have to choose. You have to choose sides if you want someone to represent you" (NGO15, personal interview, Belfast, September 2011).

To the DUP's credit, under its current leadership the party has struck a more conciliatory tone towards Catholics in particular, and minority groups in general. In the same article that reported on the 'No Surrender' affair, the current party leader, Peter Robinson, stated, "I want to see a unionist community that is confident and generous and one that reaches out to those from all parts of the community and indeed to those who come to Northern Ireland from abroad."[136] Confidence is a major issue for loyalist communities, still reeling from a combination of de-industrialization and what many see as a sort of status reversal; unsurprisingly, confidence in post-conflict governance, political leadership, and

---

[136] Moriarty 2008.

institutions has waned significantly (McKay 2005). And the movement beyond the hardline position can be seen in the party's recent choices for open seats; in the recent local elections, the party ran Sammy Douglas, a community worker with close personal ties to republican activists, for office in East Belfast – and he won. But there are still elements of unionism that see any efforts to reach out to communities beyond their own as something tantamount to treason; in response to the Sammy Douglas nomination, Harry Toan, a candidate for the Traditional Unionist Voice (TUV) party in East Belfast released a statement on his website noting,

> The adulation of Mr Douglas from Martin O'Muilleoir [a Sinn Féin affiliate] is no recommendation. Nor is being a 'very close personal friend' of a prominent Shinner a boast of which to be proud. Mr. Douglas may, to the great satisfaction of his close personal friend, O'Muilleoir, speak the tongue of the Gael, but I'd far rather speak the tongue of the ordinary folk of East Belfast in opposing the laentable [sic] failure of the DUP/Sinn Fein coalition at Stormont.[137]

Douglas' subsequent election victory may have been an important repudiation of the old politics of division, and his longstanding engagement in community activism represents a new direction for the DUP, but clearly there is more work that needs to be done within the rank-and-file of political parties in order to root out sectarianism for good.

Overall, it is still early days yet for immigrant mobilization into electoral politics. However, it is still early days for electoral politics in Northern Ireland in general. Under direct rule, local politicians had no real responsibility for managing

---

[137] The press release is available on the TUV website at : http://www.tuv.org.uk/press-releases/view/1019/tuv-comments-on-irish-speaking-dup-candidate-who-is-'close-personal-friend'-of-top-shinner [Accessed October 2011].

the day-to-day affairs or setting policy for the province, and this role was handed

over to the civil service and the community sector. Now that elected officials are

technically running the show, they at times have found it difficult to make the shift

from talking about political violence to dealing with mundane bread and butter

political issues. As one republican activist noted during an interview on a snowy

afternoon in Belfast:

> Look, now people are worried about the snow, and clearing the paths…but you don't
> worry about the snow on the pavements if a 1,000 pound bomb went off in the city
> center yesterday, or if three people were shot the night before…today we are not so
> transfixed by the politics of the last atrocity (NGO3, personal interview, Belfast,
> December 9, 2010).

There have also been turf battles between elected officials and the community

sector. One local bureaucrat noted that politicians were "driven demented" by the

community sector, and added that elected officials constantly complained about

community groups:

> …because they imagined that once they [the politicians] got their shit together, the
> community sector would just fall away…So for them, it's like 'feck off and stop
> telling us what to do'…They are very cross" (BUR2, personal interview, Belfast,
> December 16, 2010).

Clearly, post-conflict participation in electoral politics has been a learning process

for everyone.

Incorporative Activities – Capacity Building

The second component of incorporative activity under analysis is capacity

building, which includes "educating people about issues and participatory channels,

and providing them with the resources and motivations to participate" (Andersen 2010, 71). Key elements include 1) education about formal and informal political institutions – i.e. the written and unwritten rules of the game, 2) strategic partnerships or financial support, and 3) taking on an intermediary role.

Migrant capacity building is an area where there is the most visible, vigorous incorporative activity in Northern Ireland. The extensive presence of community-based organizations, the significant funding streams dedicated to good relations, and the statutory requirements of the political institutions – most notably via Section 75 – means that there are a plethora of groups positioned to help immigrants get their foot in the door of Northern Irish politics, and a civil service and political class who are required by law to take their needs and concerns seriously. This is not to say that all is perfect, however: at times, the still-unsettled nature of community relations in the North spills over into incorporative activity, sometimes with dark undertones. I explore capacity building across two key types of non-governmental organizations: worker organizations and community associations.

Worker organizations and capacity building

The vast majority of immigrants in Northern Ireland are labor migrants; hence groups such as trade unions or migrant worker organizations can play an important role in capacity building. These groups have not only been able to educate migrant workers about their rights and how to make demands on the state,

but have established partnerships with migrant organizations. In addition, they have been able to use Northern Ireland's post-conflict institutions to provide both strategic and financial support to migrant communities. However, due to the sectarian nature of party politics, worker organizations have been less successful as political intermediaries.

Trade unions have been able to provide both strategic and financial support to migrant communities. The Irish Congress of Trade Unions (ICTU), a cross-border labor federation, was able to set up a migrant outreach program under the umbrella of Peace III funding. Peace III funds were established by the European Union in the wake of the conflict in order "to reinforce progress towards a peaceful and stable society and to promote reconciliation by assisting operations and projects which help to reconcile communities and contribute towards a shared society for everyone" (Special EU Programmes Body 2007). Over 330 million euros were allocated for Peace III programs between 2007-2013. While this is a large sum of money, the application and reporting requirements are onerous: in general, only large, well-staffed organizations have the internal capacity to tap into this funding stream. Because of its extensive administrative infrastructure, ICTU was able to obtain funds, but access to this kind of money is not an option for smaller, less established organizations.

In addition to financial resources, unions have engaged in strategic partnerships with migrant and minority ethnic groups to provide services to migrants. In 2010, the Belfast Migrant Centre, a joint venture between ICTU,

Unison (a UK-based trade union), the Polish Association of Northern Ireland, and the Northern Ireland Council for Ethnic Minorities (NICEM), opened in Shaftesbury Square. The Centre offers immigration and legal advice, translation services, and assistance to those facing discrimination or racism.

Non-union worker organizations have also been able to take advantage of Northern Ireland's unique post-conflict institutions. In many countries with immigration, especially new destinations, access to translators is a major issue for immigrants seeking public services or government recourse. Mindful of this problem, one migrant's rights association printed a number of pocket-sized cards that cited Section 75 and requested appropriate linguistic assistance: the cards were printed on English in one side, and in the relevant foreign language for the particular petitioner on the other. Any new immigrant who needed state services was sent to the appropriate government office with this card, and the office had a statutory duty to offer 'equal' – i.e. linguistically appropriate – services.

Despite these activities, worker organizations in Northern Ireland are in an odd position politically: unlike the Labour Party in the 'mainland' UK, or the Democrats in the United States, labor interests in Northern Ireland have no go-to partners in government, as most parties until recently were sectarian, rather than policy-oriented (and the one party with no sectarian designation, Alliance, is economically liberal and not considered particularly labor-friendly). This weakens the ability of unions to build reliable political partnerships and act as an intermediary between migrant workers and parties: trade unions, fearful of

splitting their membership, are loath to hitch their wagon to a specific party. Subsequently, both unions and worker organizations have had to work with individual politicians who are perceived as 'good' on labor or immigration issues on an ad-hoc basis.

Community Associations

Northern Ireland's community associations are unique in that they, rather than local governments, are often the direct providers of social services. This is largely due to the North's legacy of social conflict and the political vacuum created when Stormont was shut down in the 1970s. Community associations, which include resident's associations, community development groups, and other localized interest organizations, take on two keys roles: 1) they act as an intermediary between neighborhood residents and various arms of the state, including legislators, bureaucracies, and the police, and 2) they educate residents about both the formal institutions of the state (how to get public benefits, for example), and the informal institutions, or unwritten norms, of the community. These groups are deeply embedded in the province's civic landscape: over six hundred community associations are recognized by the Northern Ireland Housing Executive (NIHE), and the Housing Executive actively encourages residents to form their own organizations in order to address community concerns.[138]

---

[138] A step-by-step guide to setting up a community association is available from the Housing Executive website at: http://www.nihe.gov.uk/index/community/get_involved/community_groups/forming_a_group .htm.

Given their long-standing role as intermediaries between people living in a specific geographic area and the state, many community associations have found it quite easy to take on new immigrants as 'constituents': access to recreational space, information-sharing about municipal services, and assistance with government paperwork are issues that matter for all residents, and adding immigrants to the mix has not been a huge stretch (although language issues can sometimes be a problem). However, community associations play a dual intermediary role: they not only negotiate between residents and the state, but between different communities on the ground; Shirlow and Murtagh characterize the role of the community sector as a "circuit breaker of communal angst"(2006, 51). For example, while residents and neighborhood associations try to stamp out sectarian tensions and are often responsible for monitoring the gates dotting 'peace lines', the walls and fences separating Catholic and Protestant neighborhoods, they also try to mediate more mundane disputes between neighbors such as loitering or littering.[139]

When it comes to immigration, however, this secondary role may actually be the most important as misunderstandings can escalate quickly, especially given the volatile nature of Northern Irish politics. Many of the tensions around immigration at the neighborhood level stem from the fact that locals feel new arrivals are not

---

[139] There can be a darker side to resident's associations as well, which are often staffed by ex-paramilitaries: intimidation, banishment, beatings, and 'kneecapping', the practice of shooting 'problematic' individuals through the knees to send a message to them and the community at large, have all been used to impose social order on close-knit communities that are often suspicious of the police and outside interference. While these tactics are often used to address problems of 'anti-social behavior', in particular joyriding and petty drug dealing, at times these practices have been used to protect drug dealers and racketeering rings.

being 'neighborly' – an unwritten social norm – so local groups try to organize

community activities such as dinners and sporting events. However, they also get

involved in informal street-level regulation around issues like people not emptying

their trash bins properly or loitering. For example, one community worker

recounted that in his area, there had been issues with Roma immigrants who

collected scrap metal: while they would search through garbage and recycling bins,

they would not put trash that spilled out back in the bins and the homeowner would

end up getting fined for not maintaining their bins properly (NGO9, personal

interview, Belfast, July 2010). Since this area has high unemployment and many

people survive on government benefits, this put a significant financial burden on

local families. These kinds of issues are usually resolved by someone from the

native organization approaching a 'community leader' from a given immigrant

group. However, this approach can be problematic if an immigrant group doesn't

have a point of contact – or if local people don't trust immigrant community liaisons.

The latter came up as being an issue with the Roma community in South Belfast:

multiple community groups have tried to work with the Roma to help them to better

understand community norms and avoid conflict, but none of the local people that I

spoke with felt that they had a good working relationship with the Roma, despite

their best efforts.

Beyond the minutiae of city life, community workers have also been deeply

involved in managing anti-immigrant prejudice. At times, these complaints can

seem ridiculous. One interviewee noted that he had received numerous resident

complaints about immigrants just being visible around the neighborhood, which was interpreted as "just strutting about as if they owned the place"; exasperated, he added "if you get angry about the way somebody walks, there's something wrong with *you!*" (NGO6, personal interview, Belfast, December 2010). However, he went on to note that there is a growing perception, particularly in loyalist housing estates, that it is government policy to displace people out of estates near 'ethnic frontiers', namely communities where the demographics are changing or gentrification is in motion (or both). This speaks, again, to the aforementioned confidence issues in the unionist community: as many middle-class Protestants have moved to the suburbs, and immigrants and students have moved into or near their emptying neighborhoods, working-class Protestants, particularly in inner-city Belfast, feel increasingly besieged.[140] These tensions boiled over in 2009, when over a dozen Roma families were intimidated out of their homes in a loyalist area, an incident that was a dark reminder of the 'bad old days' that many in Northern Ireland would like to put behind them. While mediation has helped to mitigate social conflict in new areas of Roma settlement, unfortunately the use of extrajudicial means towards community ends has not completely disappeared in the North.

Less successful than mediation has been attempts to promote cultural exchange and learning through cross-community events such as pot-lucks and culture nights. While several community leaders saw 'breaking bread'-type events

---

[140] The hollowing-out of neighborhoods is less of an issue in Catholic areas, which have historically been overcrowded due to limited housing options and large families.

as ineffectual but harmless, one interviewee – a Northern Ireland native – felt that these kind of events were "tokenistic and racist", and most organizers were not cognizant of the symbolism of mostly non-white immigrants serving food to white natives, a situation he characterized as a "saris and samosas kind of welcome…not quite as bad as 'dance, monkey boy!'", but not positive either (NGO17, personal interview, Belfast, 13 December 2010). However, the lack of opportunity for casual socialization in Northern Ireland is problematic; one community worker noted that one of the key lessons learned from immigration in England is that many immigrants, particularly those from outside of the European Union, are not going to socialize in pubs, and Ireland and the UK do not have much of a 'café culture' (NGO4, personal interview, Belfast, December 7, 2010).[141] The situation is complicated by the fact that even leisure activities in Northern Ireland are seen through sectarian lenses: sports like hurling and Gaelic football are seen as 'Catholic', while soccer, rugby, and hockey are 'Protestant'. This is one area that community organizations have not quite figured out how to navigate.

The differences in patterns of casual socializing, combined with high levels of residential segregation raise another key issue for community associations: given the divided nature of Northern Irish society, whose version of civil society are resident's associations meant to teach new immigrants about? Republicanism?

---

[141] I heard similar complaints from non-EU origin migrant community leaders in Dublin: the fact that so much of Irish social life revolves around a raucous drinking culture means that many new arrivals and their children face unintentional social inclusion. Interestingly, this is one area where locals and new immigrants have similar complaints; many Irish people would like to see more café-style options for family gatherings or casual socialization outside of pubs. However, a recent bill to introduce café licensing was killed; the powerful publican lobby had a strong hand in its defeat.

Unionism? 'Britishness'? The question of 'whose civic-ness?' came into the spotlight

when, in 2005, it became public that an anti-racism organization in West Belfast

had created a "Welcome Packet" for migrant families that counseled new arrivals

against calling the police. Specifically, it stated:

> The police force in the north of Ireland (the PSNI) is seen by most people here as an extension of the British state and has no support. You should avoid calling them into the area, unless it is a necessity, eg, for insurance purposes. If the PSNI ask questions about your neighbours you should not answer them and you should inform your local community centre or councillor at once. It is advisable not to go to a PSNI station alone (WARN 2005, as cited in Geoghegan 2010).

Although the pamphlet caused a general uproar at Stormont, Unionists were

particularly outraged that public funds had underwritten the production of the

pamphlets. However, a columnist in the nationalist newspaper, the *Irish News*,

argued:

> The vast majority of people in West Belfast are Sinn Féin voters. Sinn Féin does not support the PSNI. They state this regularly. Life is difficult for people from an ethnic background finding their place in northern society. Indeed last week the PSNI issued figures showing a steady increase in racially motivated attacks across the north. It would have been highly irresponsible of Warn had they not explained to members of the ethnic community the attitude of the people in west Belfast to the PSNI...The advice in the booklet does not compromise those it is aimed at. It is not trying to co-opt them into a republican position. It is not saying to them don't support the police. It is factual advice. It is dealing with reality on the ground, in the streets of west Belfast where some members of the ethnic community have chosen to live and work.[142]

Therefore, from a certain republican perspective, the welcome packet made perfect

sense, and its distribution was a clear form of incorporative activity – in this case,

education about the neighborhood's informal institutions - that was consistent with

republican political and social values. Here, however, the emphasis is on a *certain*

---

[142] Jim Gibney, "Seems political vetting is still alive and well," *Irish News*, June 2, 2005.

republican perspective: Geoghegan (2010) found that the WARN packet did not go over well with other community groups in republican West Belfast either, with one local community leader calling it a "nightmare" (pg. 135).

The disagreement over the welcome packet makes clear that there are multiple models of citizenship and multiple polities in Northern Ireland. However, the recognition of different citizenship traditions is part and parcel of the GFA. Article 1 states:

> The two Governments recognize the birthright of all the people of Northern Ireland to identify themselves and be accepted as Irish or British, or both, as they may so choose, and accordingly confirm that their right to hold both British and Irish citizenship is accepted by both Governments and would not be affected by any future change in the status of Northern Ireland.

While this clause was clearly meant to assuage Protestant concerns about their legal relationship with the UK should Northern Ireland someday vote to become part of the Republic, it indirectly highlights that there are two competing traditions of citizenship in the region. And while the GFA is primarily concerned with the legal status of citizenship, the bigger issue for social cohesion in the North is that the practice of citizenship has been quite different between the two communities, and this divide goes far deeper than what country's name is stamped on the face of one's passport. Given that there is no clear consensus on what citizenship means to the residents of Northern Ireland, one must wonder what exactly the expectations should be for new migrants in the province.

Conclusion

Incorporative activity in Northern Ireland is uneven, but it is certainly underway. At this stage, political parties have played a relatively limited role in the process, which is not surprising, since until recently they have played a relatively limited role in governance. However, the community sector has been engaged in incorporative activity, whether through partnering with migrant organizations, educating new populations about their rights (and obligations) as residents of Northern Ireland, or providing direct funding to groups that work on migration-related issues. In the short-term, however, one has to wonder how sustainable the heavy public subsidization of the voluntary sector is: this cycle of Peace funding through the EU will end in 2013, and London has imposed austerity measures across the UK. That said, the stakes are much higher in Northern Ireland than in other parts of the UK: as one community activist who struggled to get funding for her organization noted, "here, the government [through underwriting the community sector] has bought the peace" (field notes, Belfast, 30 July 2009). As long as the community sector is seen as playing a critical role in maintaining the peace, it is hard to imagine public financial support for or local interest in voluntary activity will dry up completely.

IV. Migrants and Nationalists

It is worth taking a moment to consider the relationship between new immigrants and Irish nationalists. Nationalism, by its very nature is exclusionary, yet CNR (Catholic/Nationalist/Republican) political parties and community

organizations have taken on the task of incorporation across several key dimensions: electoral politics (albeit limited), substantive representation on key migration-related issues, and migrant community outreach and capacity building. An analysis of party behavior and interviews with political leaders and activists across the political spectrum also suggests that, in general, CNR organizations have been more engaged in incorporative activity than their Protestant/Unionist/Loyalist (PUL) counterparts. Why are CNR groups so willing to take on the task of incorporation?

First, perhaps the most basic argument is that substantive representation and new immigrant outreach may be driven solely by demographics. One might assume that CNR groups are more likely to take on the task of incorporating new immigrants because new immigrants have settled in predominately Catholic neighborhoods. But this is not the case; due to a legacy of housing shortages in Catholic neighborhoods, and the suburbanization of much of the Protestant population (particularly in Belfast), new immigrants are actually more likely to settle in Protestant areas than Catholic neighborhoods.[143] Another demographic argument may be that CNR groups are simply looking out for the interests of their co-ethnics; for example, the two SDLP migrant candidates were also Catholic. While there may be some sense of religious solidarity, this is not anything that is talked about explicitly which, given the tribal nature of the region's politics, is unusual.

---

[143] In Belfast, this movement has been dubbed the 'donut effect': middle class Protestants have moved out of core urban areas into first-ring suburbs surrounding the city.

Instead, the language of rights is consistently universal, and rooted in the very specific Northern Irish 'good relations' vernacular.

Second, it may be the case that the political actors who engage in the task of incorporation are doing so for purely rational reasons: they are looking to build their support base (Dahl [1974] 2005) or to open up a closed political process in order to further their own agenda (Schattschneider 1960). Therefore, we might expect those groups who are political outsiders or relatively weak to turn to immigrants as a possible means of shoring up their base. To a certain extent, this may be true. As a numerical minority, CNR organizations may feel the need to shore up their base more than their PUL counterparts. And this dynamic can be seen even within the CNR community; it is notable that the SDLP, which has lost significant vote share to Sinn Féin since the 1990s, was the nationalist party that ran three immigrant candidates for office. However, given the structure of the Agreement institutions when it comes to the 'national question', it would seem that both communities have an incentive to educate and incorporate migrants, as under the terms of the peace process, the vote to remain part of the UK or re-unite with Ireland will be made by a simple majority vote. In a close referendum, migrants could tip the balance either way.

One criticism that is frequently leveled at republicans is that they may support minority rights, but that their support is mainly symbolic or 'cheap'. From a unionist perspective, it is easy for republicans to be pro-immigration, because there are relatively few immigrants living in their neighborhoods. This view of

republicanism is consistent with the oft-heard unionist complaint that republicans are good at public relations, even if things are all flash and no substance (POL4, personal interview, Belfast, 7 September 2011). However, some republican activists have voiced similar concerns; one interviewee noted that it was easy for republicans to be 'smug' because they did not have to deal with the day-to-day realities of rapid immigration in the same way that unionist communities have (POL2, personal interview, Belfast, December 11, 2010).

The problem with this perspective is that it is not entirely clear how 'cheap' support for migrant political incorporation actually is. More than the SDLP or the Alliance party, Sinn Féin and republican organizations rely on working class communities for their political support, and these are areas where migrants are often perceived as being in direct competition with native workers.[144] In other parts of the UK, communities with similar demographics provide the base of support for the extreme-right British National Party. Yet Sinn Féin and other republican groups not only publicly support migrants' rights, they work quite carefully to manage internal community relations when migrant-native conflicts arise, and take their 'circuit breaker' role seriously.[145] These local conflicts have increased in recent years as, in the wake of a series of spectacular attacks on immigrant homes in and

---

[144] Or perhaps not: one Eastern European community organizer drily noted that migrants were accused of "stealing people's jobs" but "my neighbors haven't worked a day in their lives" (field notes, Belfast, July 30, 2009). Among the native-born population, Northern Ireland has the lowest workforce participation rate in the UK.

[145] This is not to say that these activities don't go on in other areas – residents associations in "mixed" areas that abut both traditionally Catholic and Protestant neighborhoods have worked particularly hard to promote and maintain good community relations.

around Belfast, republican areas are increasingly seen as safer than loyalist neighborhoods.

Finally, the cheap/symbolic politics critique seems particularly odd within the context of Northern Ireland's politics, because symbolic politics is a key component of both local political spats and broader claims about nationhood. In Northern Ireland, symbols are so central to the debate around the national question, and so contentious, that there is an entire section of the 1998 Act dedicated to the regulation of 'Flags and Symbols' in the workplace and public areas. In a place where gable walls in paramilitary-controlled housing estates regularly telegraph community sentiment via use of historically contentious symbols such as the Red Hand of Ulster, the Union Flag, or the Armalite rifle, symbolism matters far more than critics give it credit for.[146]

Given the history of the nationalist community in Northern Ireland, and particularly in the republican heartlands of Derry and Belfast, the most plausible explanation may be that the republican experience of being a disenfranchised minority group has affected its response to new immigration. Some community activists with roots in the Catholic civil rights movement have made this connection explicitly; when asked by *The Independent* about her current political activism around migrants rights through a rural development association, Bernadette Devlin, the student civil rights leader and former MP, noted "People have said, 'You

---

[146] Symbolism is so central to Northern Irish politics that groups often adopt symbols that are in direct opposition to what another group adopts. For example, pro-Palestinian murals and symbols (flags, keffiyehs) are common in republican areas. Subsequently, Israeli flags have appeared in some hardline loyalist areas.

were with us; now you're with the foreigners.' I say, 'No. I am doing the same thing I have always done. It's still about people having a right to fulfill their potential and not be excluded from that because of other people's prejudice."[147] And in West Belfast, the International Wall, a series of murals along the Falls Road, explicitly links the past experience of anti-Irish discrimination to the situation of immigrants and ethnic minorities today [see Appendix D]. Solidarity has been a consistent theme in republicanism, and there is a growing body of research that suggests that previously marginalized groups have more empathy for and solidarity with other 'out' groups (Fetzer 2000; Hayes and Dowds 2006).

This is not to suggest that the process of incorporation is in any way easy for republicans. In areas where migration patterns have shifted quite dramatically, some are clearly struggling to rectify their ideological beliefs with their day-to-day concerns about maintaining community cohesion and culture. During an impromptu chat with one republican activist, he wistfully noted that his community had worked extremely hard to rebuild Gaelic culture and maintain social order in their community, and it was difficult to see that some newcomers did not respect that.[148] But this same man proudly recounted how he had been able to help new immigrants not only find housing, but get permission to remain in the UK. One suspects that there are many republican activists and community workers who share this man's dedication to the task of incorporation, but harbor similar concerns about how migration may affect the long-term political project of a united Ireland.

---

[147] Cole Moreton, "Bernadette McAliskey: Return of the Roaring Girl", *Independent* [Ireland], October 8, 2008.
[148] Field notes, Belfast, August 2010.

V. Conclusion

At first glance, Northern Ireland would seem to be an unlikely case for incorporative activity. Yet parties, community groups, and unions are clearly moving in that direction. What are some of the implications of this case, especially when we take the experience of the Republic of Ireland into account?

First, the experience of Northern Ireland shows that incorporative activity is possible in new destinations, even under difficult circumstances. This finding is significant, for there are growing concerns that today's new destinations will struggle with incorporation, as they do not have the institutions, political actors, or historical narratives that foster incorporative activity in 'old' destinations.[149] Put slightly differently, incorporative activities in new destinations are expected to be limited because native actors lack the kind of political 'toolkit' that old destinations have developed in order to manage new immigration: the "repertoire...of habits, skills, and styles from which people construct 'strategies of action'" (Swidler 1986: 273). But the experience of Northern Ireland suggests that these fears may be misplaced: societies can draw on existing institutions that are a legacy of prior social conflict, immigrants may find that they have local political allies, and both political actors and average citizens may be able to use existing historical narratives in order to help them make sense of new immigration. In effect, new destination societies may have developed their own 'toolkits' during past historical

---

[149] See Waters and Jimenez 2005; Griffith 2008; Andersen 2010; Marrow 2011.

252

battles over identity and inclusion that, in turn, equip them to deal with unanticipated future conflicts around similar issues affecting new immigrants.

Second, the nature of Northern Ireland's politics raises an interesting question about political incorporation. If the point of incorporative activity is to help new immigrants to become members of the polity, in a contested society where there are still disagreements over identity, citizenship, and national belonging, one has to ask: what polity might that be? The "No surrender" affair involving the Polish worker at the DUP conference and the anti-PSNI flyers in West Belfast are clear examples of incorporative activity – the former incident was the result of political outreach, and the latter an attempt at migrant civic education – but they were also attempts at incorporating migrants into two very different civic traditions that are still at odds with each other. While loyalist DUP members or West Belfast republicans may have supported these actions within their own communities, the reaction to these events outside of those communities suggests that incorporative activity by groups at the far ends of the political spectrum can inflame, rather than ease tensions in contested societies.

One long-term question that remains for migrant political incorporation in Northern Ireland is whether migrants may present an opportunity to increase the size of the non-sectarian 'third-way' groups in the North, or they will be absorbed into the two-camp nationalist-or-unionist system. Thus far, the picture is unclear: although the non-aligned Alliance party has become inextricably linked to migrant-related issues, arguably (nationalist) Sinn Féin and the (unionist) DUP have

broader political support and are much more influential in terms of policy – hence the previously comment from the migrant rights activist who noted that immigrants needed to choose a side if they wanted to be represented. However, there are signs that migrants may be uniquely positioned to help re-focus the region's attention on normal politics; the Hong Kong-born Alliance MLA Anna Lo has stated repeatedly that part of her appeal to voters is that they know she is not thinking about how policies would benefit 'her' community at the expense of the other. Some trade unionists have also speculated about the potential role for immigrants in re-orienting the region's politics, with the thinking being that a non-aligned social-democratic party that can unite working-class voters would also have political 'space' for immigrants. That said, this is not a universally held sentiment: when I asked a different union representative if she thought this could become a reality in the future, she smiles wanly and replied, "If you are a very optimistic person, yes" (Union4, personal interview, Belfast, July 2010).

Northern Ireland is a strange, but fascinating case, and it is full of contradictions. But when one compares it to the North to the Republic, one can begin to understand how the differences in political development over the course of the twentieth century shaped the present-day responses to migration in ways that we would not expect. Unlike the quangos and institutions set up in the Republic, it is difficult, if not impossible to completely roll back the quangos and institutions in the North that deal with questions of equality, racism, and social integration: in the North, these institutions are backed by powerful constituencies and by legal statute.

In addition, in Northern Ireland, the legacy of both the Catholic civil rights movement and the peace process gives today's community activists a powerful historical narrative with which to justify the civic inclusion of – and to combat acts of overt racism and discrimination against – new immigrant communities. Finally, immigrant communities have seen the emergence of native political allies among those groups who are looking to expand their political influence outside of the two communities (i.e. nationalist-unionist) paradigm. It is unclear how influential or sustainable these groups will be over time, but they have created some political space for immigrants in Northern Ireland, and as the case of Anna Lo shows, not being a member of a 'tribe' may have its privileges after all.

Stepping back, however, it must be asked: what can we really learn from Northern Ireland's tribal politics? More broadly, can we really be confident that the lessons learned from comparing Ireland and Northern Ireland would be useful anywhere else in the world? In other words, how can we be sure that these cases are externally valid? Here I introduce a third case into the analysis: Spain. Spain, like Ireland is a new destination country in Europe, having spent much of the twentieth century bogged down in civil war, separatist violence, and economic stagnation. Like the Irish Republic, it experienced a massive housing bubble in the 2000s (that burst in spectacular fashion towards the end of the decade), and that bubble was a key point of attraction for migrant workers who poured, en masse, into the construction industry. And, like Ireland north and south, native political actors struggled with the issue of political incorporation. Unlike Ireland, however, a

significant percentage of Spain's immigrants were Muslim, undocumented, or both: all factors that normally contribute to anti-immigrant sentiment in Europe. Spain has also had a consistently high unemployment rate, even during its boom years. Given these key factors, we might expect to see less incorporative activity in Spain than in Ireland or Northern Ireland.

Yet, this is not the case. Spanish parties have extended amnesties (thereby granting residency and a pathway to citizenship) and enhanced voting rights to new immigrants. Spanish unions reached out to migrant workers as early as the 1990s. And the Spanish government supported a number of organizations and institutions geared towards both building migrant capacity to participate in civic life and build bridges between migrant communities and native political actors. Why do we see such different reactions to immigrants among native actors when we compare Spain and Ireland – what explains this variation? That is the focus of the next chapter.

Table 5.1: Foreign-born population of Northern Ireland, 1997 – 2010

Year	Non-Irish Foreign-Born as a % of the total population in Northern Ireland
1997	1%
2003	2%
2010	4.5%

Source: NISRA

Table 5.2: Country of origin as a percentage of the foreign-born population in Northern Ireland (2007)

Country or Region of Birth	Northern Ireland 2007
Ireland	36.2%
Other Europe	30.9%
Eastern European Accession States (% of total migrant population)	24.5%
Rest of the World	33%
TOTAL	100.0%

Source: NISRA

Figure 5.1:
Distribution of Protestant-Catholic Population in Belfast[150]

RELIGIOUS DISTRIBUTION IN BELFAST

Map showing the proportion of Roman Catholics in each of Belfast's Electoral Wards. The built-up areas of each Ward are colour-coded to give an indication of the proportion. See the key below.
(Figures from 1991 Census)

Key to Colours

- 0 to 20% Catholic
- 21 to 40% Catholic
- 41 to 60% Catholic
- 61 to 80% Catholic
- 81 to 100% Catholic

KEY

Scale: 1 grid square side = 1 kilometre

- 1992 Electoral Ward Boundary
- Motorway / Dual-Carriageway
- Main Road
- Railway (with stations)
- Parkland, sports grounds, etc

White areas denote non-built-up areas.

NOTE

The divisions marked in blue on this map are the Electoral Wards in the Belfast area. These Ward boundaries date from 1992, whereas the figures used to derive the colours are from the 1991 census. Between 1991 and 1992 the Ward boundaries changed slightly. Therefore, while it is highly likely that the colours are correct, it cannot be guaranteed 100%. The ward of Musgrave did not exist at the time of the Census, so its colour is a 'guestimate' derived from knowledge of the area and analysis of the nearby Wards.

Unlike the rest of this site, this map is declared to be in the public domain.

Percentage of Catholics for Selected Wards

Ward	%	Ward	%
Andersonstown	94.1	Duncairn	1.1
Ardoyne	89.7	Falls	91.2
Ballymacarrett	43.4	Highfield	1.8
Blackstaff	3.4	New Lodge	86.0
Botanic	50.2	Shaftesbury	30.9
Cherryvalley	4.0	Shankill	0.9
Cliftonville	49.0	Sydenham	0.9
Clonard	92.7	Water Works	80.3
Crumlin	1.3	Woodvale	0.5

[150] Source: CAIN http://cain.ulst.ac.uk/index.html

Figure 5.2 : Net migration in Northern Ireland (NISRA 2010)

Figure 1: Estimates of long-term net migration - Northern Ireland (1973/4 - 2008/9)
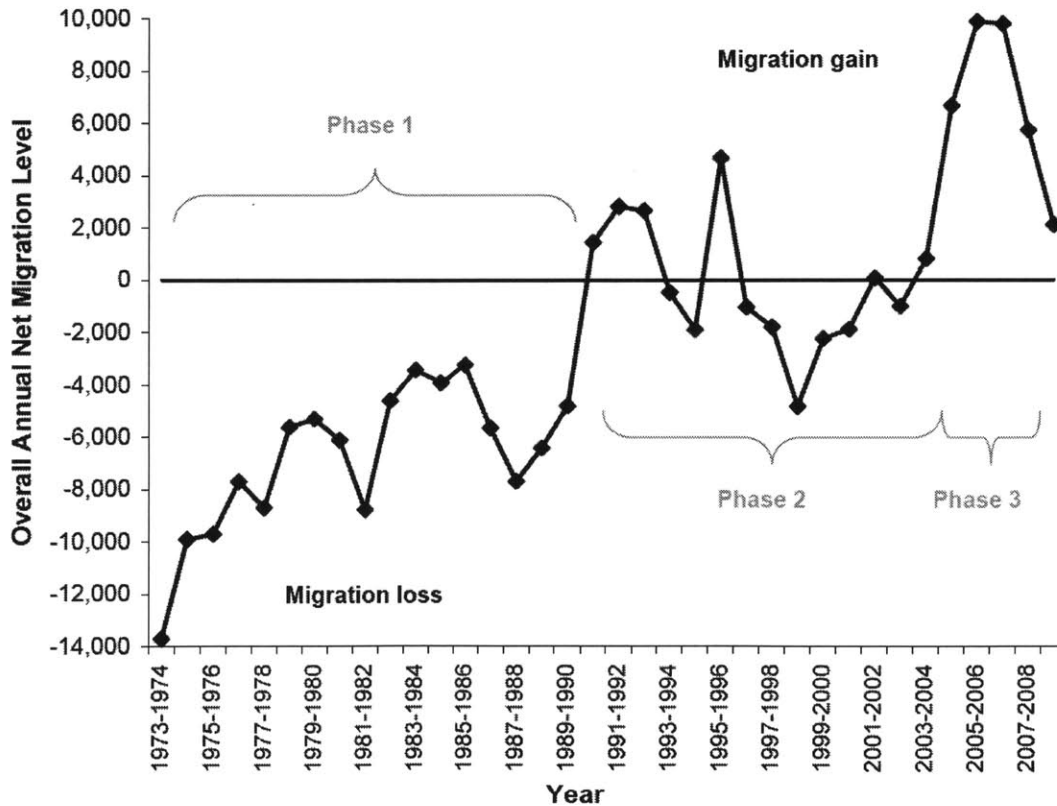
Figure 5.3 – West Belfast International Wall

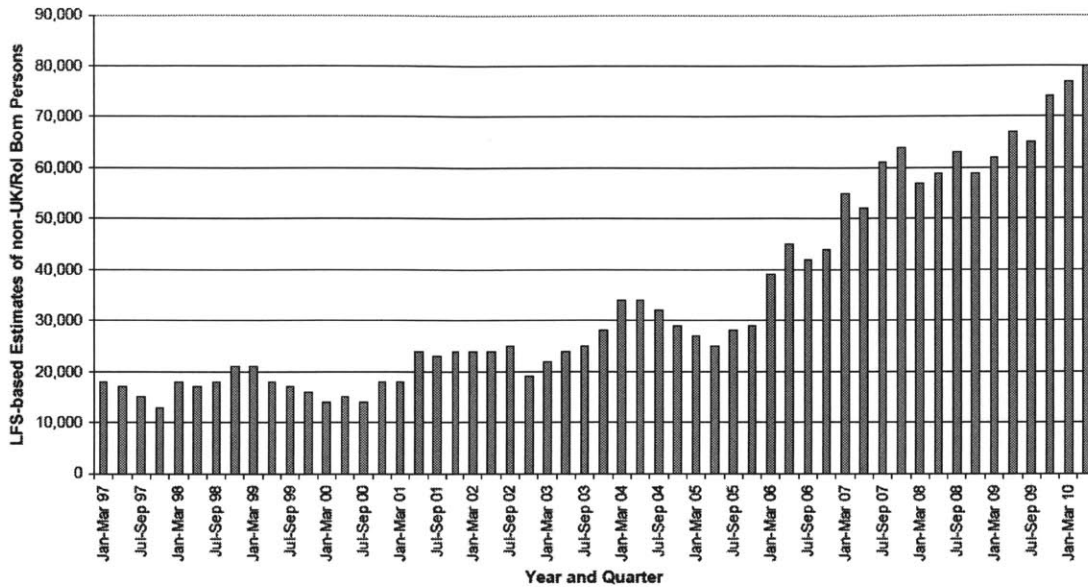The following photos are examples of republican murals that emphasize solidarity with other marginalized groups. All photos were taken by the author.

Photo 1: Falls Road, West Belfast, September 2011
This photo was taken at the beginning of the "International Wall" at the lower end of the Falls Road. Interestingly, it highlights the discrimination that Irish workers faced in London in the 1960s, and compared it to the idealized welcome ('Fáilte') of new migrant workers in Belfast. The West Against Racism Network (WARN) was the same organization that distributed the controversial welcome packets asking new residents not to bring the police into the area.

Ironically, just behind the welcome mural is a 'peace line', a three-story high fence separating the majority nationalist population along the Falls Road from the neighboring Shankill Road area, which is majority unionist.
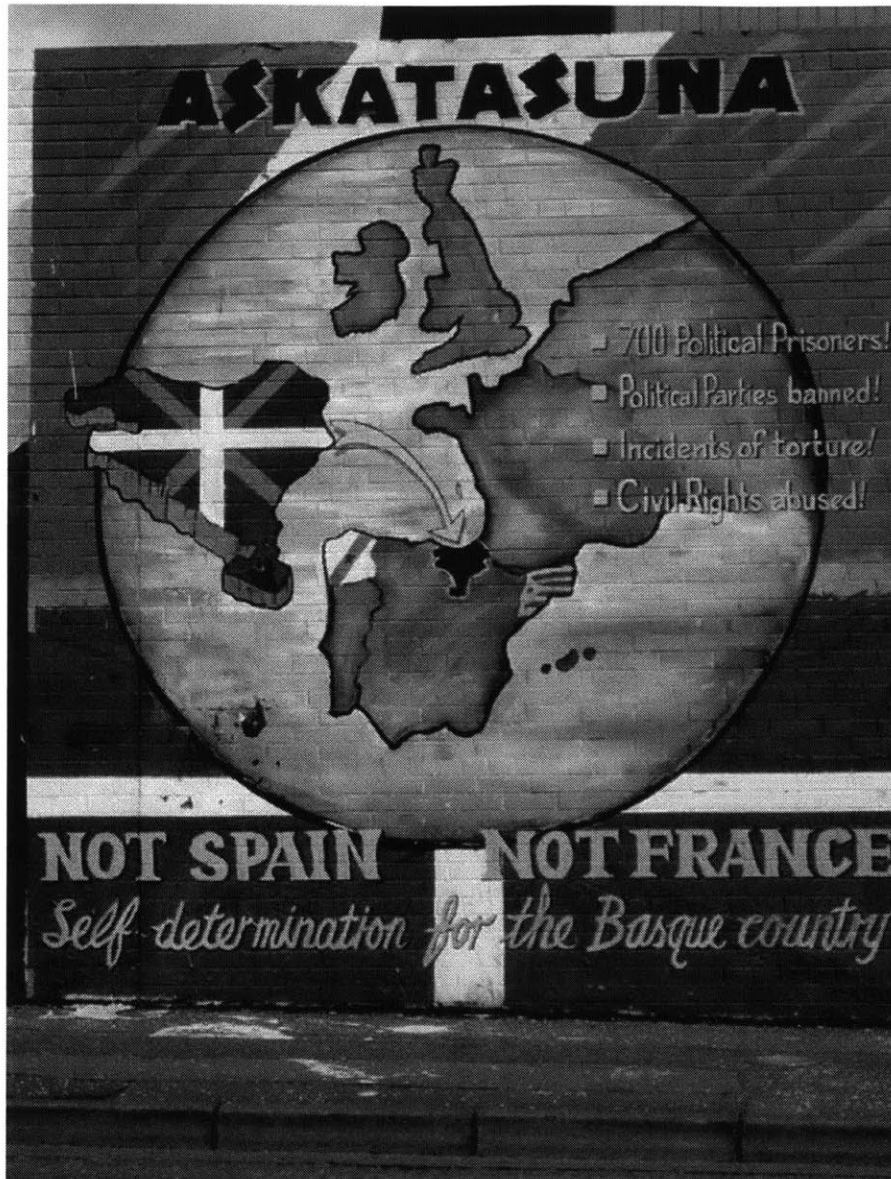
Photo #2, Falls Road, West Belfast, July 2009
This photo, also from the International Wall, illustrates solidarity with other regional nationalists, in this case the Basques. The mural also highlights Catalan and Galician homelands.

Photo #3, Falls Road, West Belfast, July 2009
Another example of historical parallels: Fredrick Douglass. Northern Catholics
have a history of linking their struggles to those of African-Americans: the black
civil rights movement in the United States provided both inspiration and a template
for the Catholic civil rights movement in Northern Ireland.

Chapter Six - "Spain is Different": Unraveling the mysteries of the Spanish approach to immigrant political incorporation

In Spain, the dead are more alive than in any other country in the world.

>   - *Federico García Lorca*

In the early 1960s, the Spanish government, having decided that tourism could be a viable pathway to economic growth, launched a publicity campaign with the tagline "Spain is Different". While this new slogan was meant to evoke an image of "exotic" Spanish culture for Northern Europeans, one could not deny that in many ways, Spain *was* different: two decades after the end of World War II, Spaniards, unlike their former Italian and German allies, still lived under an fascist regime.

Now, over forty years later, Spain is held up as a model of democratization. Its transition to pluralistic politics was relatively peaceful and stable - the government has changed hands four times since the 1978 constitution was implemented - and Spain has caught up with the social policies of other European countries: divorce, effectively prohibited under Franco, is now legal, and more recently Spain was the third country in Europe to legalize gay marriage. Unfortunately, it also faces many of the same economic challenges as its Mediterranean neighbors: a seemingly intractable double-digit unemployment rate, wobbly banks, and government austerity. In many ways both economic and social, Spain's rapid convergence with the rest of Western Europe is complete.

However, when it comes to immigration, Spain is still different. Despite consistently high levels of unemployment over the last two decades, Spanish unions have been vocal supporters of migrant social and political rights, and have even gone so far as to establish migrant worker outreach centers.[151] Despite data from the European Social Survey (2006) showing that close to half of Spaniards feel that too many immigrants are being allowed into the country - and a solid 15% of the adult population thinks that there should be no non-European immigration at all - Spanish parties have enacted multiple amnesties for undocumented migrant workers, thus granting a potential pathway to residency, and over time, citizenship. And in contrast to many European parties that have sought to limit immigrant access to citizenship and electoral politics, Spanish political parties have *extended* local voting rights to new immigrant populations.

Why is Spain 'different'? Why have native Spanish political actors – including, quite notably, regional nationalists – engaged in incorporative activity at a level that goes not only beyond Ireland, its main 'new destination' counterpart, but even many 'old destination' countries? In this chapter, I argue that the answer to this question lies in how Spain has addressed past internal conflicts that turned on the issues of minority interest representation, political identity, and the boundaries of the Spanish nation versus the state. How these conflicts were contested and resolved held long-term, unintended consequences for the structure of the country's political institutions and the interests of key native political actors,

---

[151] According to OECD data, from 1989 – 2009, Spain only enjoyed three years where its unemployment rate was not in the double-digits: 2005 (9.2%), 2006 (8.6%) and 2007 (8.3%).

and these institutions and interests interacted to shape their behavior when confronted with new immigration.

In the 1930s, the internal pressures of economic modernization, rising Basque and Catalan nationalism, church-state relations, and the struggle between monarchists and republicans boiled over and resulted in a disastrous civil war. A Fascist victory led to four decades of dictatorship and the implementation of legal, social and political institutions that were a direct reaction to the wild pluralism that characterized the early 1930s: regional autonomy was curtailed and the state centralized, political parties and trade unions were banned, the Basque and Catalan nationalist movements were crushed, and conservative Catholicism guided social policy. When social and economic pressure on the Franco regime grew in the 1970s, the system boiled over yet again, but this time, Spain's transition was to a democracy rather than dictatorship. As in the 1940s, the institutions of the new regime were a direct reaction to the policies of the preceding era: through the Spanish Constitution of 1978, the country's culturally and linguistically distinct 'historic communities' were recognized and granted autonomy, parties – including nationalist parties – and unions were legalized, and social policy liberalized. However, the historical memory of the hatred and violence of the civil war and its aftermath not only shaped the formal, but the *informal* institutions of Spanish political life. Mindful of the extremism of the 1930s, the norms of policymaking and political debate in the newly democratic Spain emphasized consultation,

compromise and inclusion in decision-making processes on matters of broad economic, social and political importance, and moderation in public statements.

Therefore, when immigration began to gain steam in the 1990s, Spain had three important contextual attributes that developed completely independently of the migration process: 1) broadly written formal political institutions derived from the 1978 Constitution that both promoted pluralism and political inclusion, and protected the rights of minorities, 2) broadly understood *informal* institutions born out of the historical memory of civil war that prioritized pluralism, consultation, and moderation in political demands, and 3) native political actors who were committed to maintaining these institutions.[152] With the arrival of new immigrants, the civic institutions originally designed to protect the right to political participation for previously marginalized communities at home and abroad were repurposed to allow for greater political inclusion of 'new minorities', namely immigrants. And the informal institutions that demanded both consultation and restraint, while fraying, have acted as a firewall against the kinds of anti-immigrant political extremism that have become commonplace in many European countries – this despite Spain's double-digit unemployment rate, one of the highest in the industrialized world.

---

[152] Here, I use Helmke and Levitsky's 2004 definition of formal and informal institutions: "We define informal institutions as socially shared rules, usually unwritten, that are created, communicated, and enforced outside of officially sanctioned channels. By contrast, formal institutions are rules and procedures that are created, communicated and enforced through channels widely accepted as official. This includes state institutions (courts, legislatures, bureaucracies) and state-enforced rules (constitutions, laws, regulations), but also what Robert C. Ellickson calls 'organization rules,' or the official rules that govern organizations such as corporations, political parties, and interest groups".

However, mindful of the havoc that disgruntled minority groups were capable of in the past, Spain's political elites have at times been motivated by fear as well: fear of the potential for extremist politics, and fear of what it would mean to have a large number of marginalized people that could cause the kind of chaos seen in Paris in 2005 – or in Barcelona and Andalusia in the 1930s. And while more nakedly political motivations are at times clearly in play, the steady movement towards increasing civic space to allow for the inclusion of immigrants has forced the hand of parties that are indifferent towards, or at times hostile to immigrant civic participation: once the door to immigrant political participation has been opened, they too rush to organize migrant voters as potential constituents, as they do not want to lose out on a potential new voter pool that has yet to commit to a given party.

In this sense, the historical memory of the chaos and violence of Spain's past plays a similar role in shaping the incorporative activities of native political actors that the historical narratives of equality and recognition that emerged from the Troubles have played in in shaping the incorporative activities of native political actors in Northern Ireland: the battles of the past – namely the articulation of demands and the means and terms of resolution - provide a political and social road map to address new issues of inclusion and representation in the present. And, as in Northern Ireland, those who made the strongest demands for political recognition in the past have been some of the most active proponents of immigrant political incorporation in the present, often drawing on the laws and institutions designed to

address their past exclusion and repurposing them to extend to new immigrants.

Therefore, with their inclusive institutions, interested political actors and use of

historical narratives and experiences to frame the contemporary issue of migration

and inclusion, Spain, like Northern Ireland, has – quite by accident – come to

develop the very attributes that facilitate incorporative activity in old destinations,

despite the fact that it had no experience with being a country of immigration until

very recently.

Given the parallels to Northern Ireland, and its particular role both in

Spain's economic modernization and the democratization process, this chapter pays

special attention to the position of the Basques, and their responses to migration.

In the late 19th and early 20th century the Basque Country, like Ireland, was a

particularly restive region within a much larger country: ethnic nationalist

movements, industrial unrest, and rising demands for separation from the 'mother

country' shaped both the internal politics of the region and the region's relationship

with the metropole. In the late 1960s, tensions over this relationship spilled over

into violence, and Basque nationalist terror on the part of ETA, like its

contemporary the Provisional IRA, provoked a state crackdown that only furthered

discontent and swelled the ranks of their supporters. The *izquierda abertzale*

(nationalist left, heretofore referred to as the abertzales), like Irish republicans,

were actively engaged in the anti-Franco movement, and today – like their

Northern Irish counterparts - they are vocal supporters of immigrant political

incorporation. Although the Basque Country has not received migrant inflows at

the levels of Madrid or Catalonia, given the strong ethnocentrism of early Basque

nationalism and the political salience of the 'national question' namely the

relationship between the Basque people and the national government, the support

for migrant political inclusion and engagement in incorporative activity on the part

of Basque parties and NGOs is still surprising.

However, the Basques differ from the Irish in two key ways. First, the

conservative parties of nationalism, Fianna Fáil in Ireland and the *Partido*

Nacionalista Vasco (the Basque Nationalist Party or PNV) have taken very

different approaches to incorporative activity: while the PNV has generally moved

in the Congreso (the lower house of the Spanish national legislature, the Cortes) to

support inclusive policies – most notably, the extension of migrant voting rights and

the shortening of the residency period to qualify for citizenship - Fianna Fáil led the

charge to restrict migrant access to citizenship. Secondly, unlike Sinn Féin and the

republican movement, the *abertzales* and affiliated political parties are not as fully

embedded in electoral politics at the regional and national levels: abertzale parties

have frequently been banned from contesting elections due to alleged ties to ETA

and other anti-system groups. Therefore, until very recently, the abertzales were

less well-positioned to influence local policymaking and to engage in incorporative

activities than their republican counterparts.

This is not to say that the overall reception for immigrants in Spain has been

uniformly welcoming. Many immigrants have reported incidents of street-level

racism – particularly against sub-Saharan Africans - and complaints of police

harassment are common in urban areas. Some immigrants from Latin America resent the colonialist overtones of Spanish migration and citizenship policies, and there have also been complaints about labor market discrimination and sporadic episodes of anti-immigrant violence.[153] However, despite anti-immigrant sentiment at the individual level, and the occasional migrant-bashing proclamations from individual politicians, these attitudes have not been *institutionalized*: unlike Ireland, the constitution has not been changed to restrict access to the polity, and unlike other European countries, far-right xenophobic parties are not in government – or in any policy-making role at all.[154] While this may be cold comfort to immigrants that have faced racial abuse or discrimination on an individual level, Spain's formal and informal institutions along with a large number of native actors interested in preserving minority rights and access to civic participation mean that at least Spain's immigrants have some hope for maintaining access to political life – and using that access in order to enhance their economic, social and political position in the future.

Section one of this chapter describes how the competing political organizations that emerged in late 19th and early 20th century Spain and their competing visions of what the modern Spanish nation-state should look like became irreconcilable by the 1930s, leading to civil war. The victorious Nationalist forces,

---

[153] Perhaps the most famous incident of anti-immigrant violence in Spain took place in El Ejido, in Andalusia. After a Spaniard was killed by a Moroccan immigrant suspected of having psychiatric problems, natives went on a rampage, attacking migrant-owned businesses and immigrants themselves; over fifty were injured.

[154] Plataforma per Catalunya (PxC), a far-right nationalist party out of Catalonia, only received 1.65% of votes cast in the 2012 Catalan elections, which was insufficient to gain a seat in the *Generalitat*, the regional parliament.

an amalgamation of right-wing groups, swept away Spain's nascent republican institutions, and instead centralized the country under a strict Castilian, Catholic, monarchic regime. Section two explores the process of democratization, and in particular the development of the 1978 Constitution, which laid out new principles of state-society relations that emphasized political pluralism and inclusion. Section three introduces the economic and social changes of the post-Franco period that led to Spain's unprecedented influx of new immigrants, and traces incorporative activity in the areas of citizenship, electoral politics, and capacity-building. Section four considers existing explanations for incorporative activity, draws direct comparisons between Spain and Ireland, and offers alternative arguments.

I.   Development and Dictatorship

The early twentieth century was a turbulent time across much of Europe, and while Spain was no exception, the level of political chaos was exceptional, even for the era:

> ...in little more than a century, Spain had six constitutions and underwent seven *pronunciamientos* (in 1820, 1843, 1854, 1868, 1874, 1923, and 1936), four monarchial abdications, two changes of monarchial dynasty, two dictatorships (one lasting nearly four decades), two republics, and four civil wars (1833-40, 1846-48, 1872-75, and 1936-39) (Gunther et al 2004, 2).[155]

The fundamental problem was that an emerging set of new political actors, the result of both economic modernization and rising nationalist sentiment across the Continent, had a fundamentally different view of the nature of state-society

---

[155] A *pronunciamiento* ('pronouncement') is a pronouncement by the military that they no longer support the current regime. This may or may not trigger regime collapse.

relations than the more traditional political groups that had long dominated Spanish politics and society. These clashes, over Spain's identity and structure as a nation-state, the representation of different groups in society, and the role of the new urban working class in national politics came to a head in the 1930s with the establishment of the short-lived Second Republic and Spain's subsequent collapse into civil war and dictatorship.

Competing Factions in early 20th century Spain

The process of political and economic modernization in late 19th and early 20th century Spain saw the emergence of new social groups and the political organizations to represent them. Most notably, new parties, unions, and other worker organizations emerged to represent the growing number of urban industrial workers in the north and northeast, and the increasingly restive landless peasants (*'journaleros'*) in the south. In addition, rising economic fortunes, cultural renaissance movements and disagreement over center-periphery relations fueled the emergence and popularity of regional nationalist parties in the Basque Country and Catalonia. Finally, poverty and chaos at home and the collapse of the Empire abroad, led to calls for an overhaul of Spanish political institutions, particularly the structure of the monarchy. Collectively, the conflict between these emerging groups and traditional powers, their multiple, cross-cutting cleavages, and escalating extremism on both ends of the political spectrum in the 1930s would lead to political and social chaos, and eventually, system collapse.

The politics of the twentieth century were in part shaped by the last, great political clash of the nineteenth century: in 1898, Spain lost the final remnants of her empire in the Spanish-American war.[156] Known as *el desastre*, ('the Disaster'), the loss of empire shattered Spanish confidence in their political institutions, raising tensions between those who wanted to see a Liberal monarchy, others who wanted to see a monarchy strongly backed by the military in order to maintain social order at all costs, and a rising number of Spaniards who wanted to do away with the monarchy altogether in order to establish a republic.

Despite its moribund political institutions, Spain was undergoing rapid economic change: its (relatively late) industrial revolution generated hard currency through exports and thousands of new jobs at home. The fact that these jobs were in cities, however, represented a major shift for a country where even as late as 1900 over half of the population still lived in the countryside. As in other European countries, urban workers were ripe for political organizing: the *Unión General de Trabajadores* (Workers General Union, or UGT), the *Partido Socialista Obrera Españoles* (Spanish Socialist Workers Party, heretofore referred to as the Socialists or the PSOE), the *Partido Comunista de España* (the Spanish Communist Party, or PCE), and the anarchist *Confederación Nacional de Trabajo* (National Confederation of Labor, or CNT) all emerged between 1879 and 1920.[157] Urban working class mobilization was particularly fervent in Catalonia, home to much of Spain's textile production, and the Basque Country, where iron ore mining and

[156] Cuba, Puerto Rico, the Philippines, and Guam were ceded to U.S. control.
[157] The PSOE was founded in 1879. The UGT was founded in 1888. The CNT was founded in Barcelona in 1910. The PCE was founded in 1920.

metallurgy formed the backbone of heavy industry. The rise of syndicalism even reached beyond the industrialized areas of the north: Andalusia, long Spain's largest, poorest, and most populous region, became the site of significant mobilization efforts among landless farmworkers – a group that one observer called "the most starved and downtrodden race of agricultural labourers in Europe" (Brenan 1943, 78). This deprivation also fueled radicalism and anti-clericalism, which ran rampant in Andalusia and Catalonia. The Catholic Church in Spain was not just a religious but a political institution, and by casting its lot with the powerful, it earned the enmity of the increasingly radical working and laboring class.[158] In a dark foreshadowing of the cataclysm to come, anti-draft riots in Barcelona in 1909 led to not only street battles between police and protestors, but the burning of several convents.

However, the process of industrialization and urbanization did not just fuel the rise of worker organizations, it also fueled the rise of regional nationalism. The Basque Country and Catalonia had long been two of Spain's regions where a significant level of autonomy from Madrid was both desired and expected. In Catalonia, the interests of cultural and business elites converged, and Catalan nationalism became a process of trying to establish, similar to Home Rule in Ireland, an autonomous region within the broader Spanish state. The Lliga Regionalista (Regionalist League) was born, in part to further these claims, in 1901. Presaging center-periphery politics in Spain for years to come, the industrialists

---

[158] One Spanish politician noted in 1900 that "Catholicism is a religion, and clericalism is a political party" (Ullman 1983).

behind the party cast their lot with anyone in Madrid who could guarantee some degree of autonomy and economically favorable institutions (Enrlich 1998). In the case of the socially and economically conservative Lliga, it also favored those who would tame the radicalism of the workers. Six years prior, the Euzko Alderdi Jeltzalea-*Partido Nacionalista Vasco* (*Basque Nationalist Party,* heretofore referred to as the PNV) was born in Bilbao, in part as a reaction to the changes wrought not only by industrialization but by the attempts to liberalize Spain's political institutions, and the party's co-founder, Sabino Arana, sought to preserve not just the old laws but what he saw as the old ways of the Basque people: rural life, the Basque language, monarchism, and a deeply devout, conservative Catholicism. Therefore, although both the Catalans and the Basques sought to maintain some degree of autonomy from Madrid, the root of the Catalan nationalist disagreement with the state was that the state was seen as a hindrance to much-desired political and economic modernization, while for nationalists in the Basque country, the state was seen as aiding and abetting (unwanted) political and economic modernization.[159]

Therefore, by the early twentieth century, there were four clear cleavages in Spanish society: 1) institutional, 2) class-based, 3) religious, and 4) center-periphery. However, many of these cleavages were cross-cutting: for example, economic elites in Catalonia and the Basque Country feared and loathed the radicalism of the working class, but while the nationalist movement that emerged in Catalonia linked Catalan industrial and political elites to the left-wing

---

[159] See Shafir 1995 for a detailed comparison of Catalan and Basque nationalism.

intelligentsia that served as the vanguard of Catalan language and culture, early twentieth-century Basque nationalism was conservative, reactionary and anti-capitalist. The inability of Spain's decaying political institutions to channel and contain these rising groups and their disparate demands would present Spanish political elites with their greatest challenge of the early twentieth century.

Modernization and the Basques

At the same time as the government in Madrid was trying to figure out how to manage its relations with its restive historical communities on its periphery, namely the Basques and Catalans, the people of the Basque Country, and in particular the provinces of Biscay and Gipuzkoa, were trying to figure out how to balance their own internal interests. As in the rest of Spain, this process in the Basque Country was triggered by political and industrial modernization, and it generated multiple disagreements over institutional arrangements, class relations, and rising ethno-nationalism.

The seeds of disagreement

In the Basque Country (also known as *Euskadi*), the center-periphery relationship was traditionally governed by the *fueros* ('old laws'), legal institutions that gave the Basque provinces varying degrees of autonomy from the central Spanish government, including the ability to set tax and tariff policy.[160] However,

---

[160] A note on terminology: the autonomous community of the Basque Country as it is known today consists of three provinces: Biscay, Gipuzcoa, and Álava. However, the term 'the

this system was ended in 1876 after the Third Carlist War and replaced with a system of tariff and tax protection run from Madrid that came to be known as the *Concierto Economico*, a change that favored the emergent industrialists but horrified traditionalists. Therefore, the old Carlists, rural conservative Catholics who supported both the monarchy and the fueros, stood in opposition to the new urban industrial class who favored closer ties to Madrid.

The industrial revolution may have come late to Spain, but it hit the Basque Country with a vengeance. Ground zero for industrialization was the province of Biscay, whose capital city, Bilbao, emerged as the region's center of industry, banking, and commerce: between 1876 and 1900, over 94 million tons of iron were mined from the province of Biscay alone, and 90% of this was set for export (de la Granja et. al. 2011). However, the emergent mines, foundries and mills needed workers, and laborers streamed in from the Basque hinterlands and beyond: by 1900, the migrant influx was such that almost half of the male population of Bilbao was born outside of the region (de la Granja et. al. 2001).

These economic changes presented a dual threat to traditional life in the Basque Country. First, the expansion of heavy industry, and the development of a regional banking center to finance it, led to the emergence of a growing industrialist class in Bilbao with close ties to the Spanish state, who they increasingly depended on to negotiate favorable trade agreements for their export goods. This represented

---

Basque Country' can also referred to the 'imagined community' of the Basque people which stretched across seven provinces: four in Spain and three in France. References to the Basque Country in this chapter are specific to the three provinces of today's autonomous community, and I occasionally use the term 'Euskadi' to avoid repetition.

a permanent threat to Basque autonomy, which was historically tied to their ability to manage their own financial affairs. Second, the insatiable need for labor in rapidly expanding Bilbao triggered inward migration, and the mines and mills of Biscay not only drew the local population away from the fishing villages and countryside of the Basque hinterlands, but from other parts of Spain as well. Not only were these outside workers, the majority of whom hailed from Castile, less religious and more anti-clerical than their local counterparts, but, radicalized by poverty and terrible working conditions, the new urban workforce flocked to the newly formed PSOE and UGT.[161]

Rising discomfort with the twin effects of industrialization – namely the emergence of both an urban working class and a bourgeoisie - fueled the rise of a third key constituency in the Basque country: nationalists. Basque nationalism was in many ways similar to its counterparts of the time, including Irish nationalism. Like Eamon De Valera and his fellow-travelers in Ireland, Basque nationalists clung to a romanticized vision of rural life that revolved around tending to smallholdings, Catholicism, national games, and the use of the native language; the emergence of heavy industry, large-scale enterprise, and a growing urban workforce therefore presented an existential threat to this traditionalist view of society.

At the forefront of this movement against the forces of industrialization was Sabino Arana, the founding father of modern Basque nationalism who not only helped to establish the *Partido Nacionalista Vasco* (Basque Nationalist Party or

---

[161] At this time, members of the UGT were required to also be members of the PSOE. See Astudillo Ruiz 2004 for an overview of how this relationship has evolved over the years.

PNV, but established some of the key symbols of the Basque nation: the flag

(*ikurriña*) and the anthem. Most importantly, he laid out the intellectual and

political framework for modern Basque nationalism: similar to Sinn Féin founder

Arthur Griffith's view on what ailed the Irish, Arana saw Basque engagement with

the political and economic matters of Greater Spain as the root of many of the

Basque Country's problems. In a speech that came to be known as the *Discurso de*

Larrazabal – one that had startling parallels to Griffith's work *The Resurrection of*

Hungary – he stated:

> ...sons of Biscay, you could see it already in the eighteenth century, intoxicated by
> the Spanish virus, anemic and without the strength to oppose those against the old
> laws (*fueros*), and finally in our century shattered by foreign forces, and expiring –
> not dead, which would be preferable – but humiliated, trampled and mocked by
> Spain, by that miserable nation...[162]

However, Arana went much further than his Irish counterparts in drawing

'bright' boundaries between the Basques and everyone else.[163] Labor migrants were

the target of much of Arana's ire: labeling them *maketos*, a slur that signified

someone who was not from the Basque Country, he famously claimed that if

---

[162] Sabino Arana, "Discurso de Larrazabal," Begoña, Viscaya, (June 3, 1893) Available from
the Basque Studies Society (Eusko Ikaskuntza):
http://www.euskomedia.org/aunamendi/46801. Griffith felt that one of the major problems
plaguing the Irish was tendency to try and resolve their issues through the British
Parliament. In his 1918 revised preface to *The Resurrection of Hungary*, he wrote: "These
are the evil fruits of Parliamentarianism masking as Constitutionalism – physical and
economic decay, moral debasement, and national denial...Ireland was sick – mind-drugged
by Parliamentarianism – but Ireland is convalescing. The memory of what she was and the
realization of what she is are restoring her to national health" (xi-xii).
[163] Alba (2005) draws distinctions between different kinds of social boundary-setting: "Some
boundaries are 'bright' – the distinction involved is unambiguous, so that individuals know
at all times which side of the boundary they are on. Others are 'blurry', involving zones of
self-presentation and social representation that allow for ambiguous locations with respect
to the boundary" (pg. 21-22).

Spaniards were to learn the Basque language, Euskera, then the Basques would have to abandon it in order to preserve their cultural distance from Spain (Conversi 1990). Unfortunately, unlike the Catalans, the Basques were not able to use their language as the glue that stitched the nation together: Euskera, like Irish, is quite dissimilar to the dominant language (Spanish and English, respectively), and therefore was not as widely used as Catalan. In addition, Euskera was still primarily a rural language, and unlike Catalan, it did not undergo a major cultural renaissance in the late 19th century, and it was not used by urban economic elites. Subsequently, Arana's construction of the imagined community was not built around the idea of Basques as a civic community, or a community united by language and culture (as the Catalans were); rather, Arana's nationalism was built on the idea of a separate, pure race that was increasingly sullied by the influx of the Spanish language and people.

These new social groups that emerged and grew out of the process of modernization began to organize themselves politically. It was in industrial and mining towns like Portugalete and Gallarta where the UGT found a ready audience and the PSOE developed a reliable voting bloc. The new economic elite of Biscay threw their support behind the Liberals. Arana's emergent PNV found its base of support among rural smallholders and conservative Catholics who were suspicious of both big industry and the radicalism of the growing working class. In other words, by the early twentieth century, Basque civil society looked a lot like other modernizing societies where the bourgeoisie, working class, and rural reactionaries

competed for primacy.[164] However, unlike Britain, France, or Germany the Basques

did not constitute an independent nation-state, and their internal political struggles

began to pale in comparison to the rising storm gathering across the rest of the

country.

Collapse and Centralization

The emergence of multiple, competing groups in Spanish politics drove cycles

of conflict and competition, as in the wake of *El Desastre* Spain made another

attempt at Liberalism, fell into dictatorship under the rule of General Miguel Primo

de Rivera from 1923 to 1930, and in 1931, established the Second Spanish Republic.

The principles of the Second Republic were largely a repudiation of a Catholic,

monarchist, centralized Spain, but the new institutions and decrees of the

government only served to deepen animosity between these competing groups,

eventually leading to systemic collapse.

The 1931 Constitution established under the newly formed Republic offered

liberal protections for individual rights in the wake of the Rivera dictatorship: it

guaranteed equality under the law regardless of gender, class, or political or

religious beliefs (Article 25), a right to peaceful assembly (Article 38), restricted

unlawful detainment (Article 29), and protected a free press and free speech (Article

34). The constitution also addressed the ongoing center-periphery conflict: Article

11 granted provinces the right of provinces to "organize themselves into an

autonomous region to form a political-administrative core within the Spanish state",

---

[164] See Moore 1966.

and Article 50 guaranteed these regions the right to develop educational systems in their own language.

However, the constitution also took square aim at those groups deemed to be a threat to the Republican regime. State subsidies to the Catholic Church were ended (Article 26) and the activities of religious orders were restricted. The legalization of divorce flew in the face of Catholic doctrine (Article 43). And Article 44's assertion that "All of the country's wealth, whoever may be its owner, is subordinated to the interests of the national economy" terrified industrialists.

Not surprisingly, the new government alarmed the more conservative elements of Spanish society, most notably the military and the Catholic Church. The army feared that granting autonomy to Spain's peripheral regions was the first step towards the dissolution of the country. Yet, with the new constitution, they were deprived of their traditional 'circuitbreaker' tool of issuing *pronunciamientos* that would trigger the fall of the regime. Instead, reactionary forces, taking their cue from the Nazi Party in Germany, used the parliamentary elections of 1933 to grab power for themselves.

Tensions escalated as well due to growing conflict between radical left-wing organizations and the Catholic Church. Like the Spanish government, the institutions of the Church were no longer fit for purpose by the early twentieth century: mass urbanization in Madrid and Barcelona, and growing inequality and poverty in Southern Spain meant that the clergy were unable to organize the masses, either for religious purposes or for the distribution of aid. Instead, secular

organizations filled the void: "As the twentieth century progressed, socialists, in cities such as Madrid and Bilbao, and anarcho-syndicalists in the Catalan industrial towns, far outdistanced Catholic syndicalists in their ability to organize the workers" (Callahan 1989, pg. 411). Left-wing political organizations, and anarchists in particular, loathed the Church hierarchy for its support of the Primo de Rivera dictatorship in the 1920s, landless peasants hated the often close ties between the Church leadership and large landowners who made life on the *latifundos*, the large estates of Andalusia, a misery, and urban workers cast a skeptical eye on 'immoral' parish priests "who 'everyone calls father, except for his own children who call him uncle'" (Thomas 2013, pg. 76). Subsequently, attacks on Church property and sacred sites, and acts of public blasphemy increased in the 1930s, further inflaming tensions. During the summer of 1931 in Málaga (Andalusia), where poverty and illiteracy remained rife and Spain's first Communist legislator was elected to office, the episcopal palace was burned, convents and churches attacked, and the graves of nuns were opened and their corpses left in the streets.[165] Mass disinterrments became startlingly common in parts of Madrid and Barcelona during this time (de la Cueva 1998). And in cities and towns across Spain, religious status and icons were defaced.

In 1936, these tensions reached their boiling point, and the Spanish military launched an uprising against the republican government. The multiple, competing

---

[165] Alfonsi, Adela. "The Recatholicisation of Málaga, 1937-1966: Church and State in the Spanish Postwar" (Ph.D. thesis, University of Adelaide, 1998), http://digital.library.adelaide.edu.au/dspace/bitstream/2440/19227/1/09pha388.pdf.

factions in Spanish civil society soon coalesced into two key coalitions: on one side Nationalists, consisting of the military, the Fascist Falange, the Catholic Church, monarchists, large landowners and industrialists, and on the other side Republicans (also called Loyalists) largely consisting of trade unionists, communists, anarchists, landless peasants, Liberals, and, by and large, regional nationalists.

When the Spanish military rebellion against the Republican government was launched in July 1936, many Basques – and Basque nationalists in particular - had a terrible decision to make: should they side with the Nationalist forces, defenders of the Church and the monarchy despite their ties to the fascist *Falange*, or side with the forces of the Republic who, despite their secularism, granted the Basque people the political autonomy they so desperately craved? Ultimately the PNV – now under the leadership of José Antonio Aguirre, who was not as reflexively hostile to Madrid and to non-Basques as his predecessor Arana - cast their lot with the Republicans: regional autonomy was anathema to the military, and it was clear from the beginning that, should the Nationalist forces prevail, Spain would revert to being a highly centralized state, and Euskadi's political and economic autonomy would be lost. This decision was also consistent with what was (and what would continue to be) one of the core principles of Basque politics: the most important factor in deciding what position to take on any given issue was the extent to which a given course of action would further the cause of Basque autonomy – political, economic and social.

Aguirre was sworn in as the *lehendekari*, the president of the newly formed

Basque Autonomous Community, Euskadi, in October 1936. Although Gipuzcoa fell

quickly, and Álava and Navarre sided with the Nationalist forces, Bilbao and much

of Biscay remained under the control of the PNV government. However, the

Nationalist forces, in their slow advance on the capital, committed horrible

atrocities against the civilian population: the Spanish military allowed the German

Condor Legion to test its new bombing and military technology on Basque civilian

targets. The most famous incident was the April 1937 market day attack in

Guernica, a staunchly nationalist town in Gipuzcoa, where over 1,600 people were

killed in three hours of aerial bombing; to this day, Guernica stands out as one of

the most depraved acts of what was already a horrifically vicious civil war.

Unfortunately for the cause of Basque nationalism, and despite the famous

vow of noted labor organizer and anti-fascist Dolores Ibárruri that *"No pasaran!"*

('They [fascists] shall not pass!'), Nationalist forces swept into Bilbao in June 1937,

effectively ending the PNV's brief experiment with self-rule. Reprisals against the

Basques, and nationalists in particular, were swift, brutal, and immediate. Biscay

and Gipuzkoa were branded 'traitor provinces' by the Franco regime, and treated

accordingly: "The Basque language, both written and spoken, was prohibited in

public and in private, and its use punished even in the environment of the family.

All folklore or cultural demonstrations (dancing, music, literature, etc.), however

insignificant, were suppressed. In short, any identity with anything other than the

Spanish language was denied" (Jauregui 1986, 598-590). The PNV leadership fled,

eventually settling in France after World War II where they established a Basque

government-in-exile. Interestingly, Basque industry was spared by both sides: the

retreating PNV-republican aligned forces decided not to destroy everything they left

behind because in their view they would need those mines and mills in the future in

order to rebuild the wealth of the Basque nation. Franco's forces spared Bilbao for

much the same reason: the city and its environs were too economically valuable to

destroy.

With the final success of the Nationalist forces in 1939, the dream of Basque

autonomy was seemingly crushed. However, despite their defeat, participation in

resistance to the nationalist forces had a profound effect on Basque national

identity:

> It would be impossible to exaggerate the importance of the Spanish Civil War for
> Basque national identity. One old soldier from those days told me that he first felt
> that he was a Basque, and therefore different from the Spanish, on the day he stood
> with his battalion in the plaza in Bilbao before the Hotel Carlton, where the Basque
> government had its headquarters, and heard President Aguirre exhort them to the
> defense of their homeland. What a decade of propaganda by Sabino de Arana y
> Goiri, and a generation of organization by the Basque Nationalist Party had failed to
> accomplish, the raising of the Basque national consciousness, Generals Mola and
> Franco managed to achieve in a matter of months (Clark 1979, pg. 76).

Despite levels of post-civil war repression higher than anywhere else in Spain, the

nationalist spark refused to go out, and the violence that would be unleashed upon

the Basque population would eventually give this spark enough oxygen to – quite

literally – engulf the regime.

Legacies of War

With the Nationalist triumph in 1939, Spain once again found itself under the control of a dictatorship, one that would prove to be remarkably durable. But even more durable than the regime would be the enmity wrought by a conflict that, despite the international attention from both idealistic socialists and fascist fellow-travelers of the Falange, was deeply personal and shockingly savage. This was a war where unfathomable levels of violence and hatred touched every level of society, even down to the smallest villages:

> On 27 July, Carranza's [nationalist] column reached one such town, Rociana in Huelva, where the left had taken over in response to news of the military coup. There had been no right-wing casualties, but the premises of the landowners' association (Asociación Patronal) and two clubs had been destroyed, twenty-five sheep had been stolen and the parish church and rectory had been burned, although the parish priest, Father Martínez Laorden, had been saved by local Socialists and given refuge in the house of the mayor. On 28 July, after Carranza's arrival, the parish priest made a speech from the balcony of the town hall: 'You all no doubt believe that, because I am a priest, I have come with words of forgiveness and repentance. Not at all. War against all of them until the last trace has been eliminated.' The women had their heads shaved and one was dragged around town by a donkey before being murdered. Over the next three months, sixty people were shot. In January 1937, Father Martínez Laorden made an official complaint that the repression had been altogether too lenient. (Preston 2006, 109).

Although the figures are still hotly contested to this day, an estimated 200,000 people were killed in the course of the civil war, and another 300,000 died of hunger or disease (Richards 1988; Tremlett 2006). In the aftermath of the Nationalist victory, thousands more deaths were attributed to 'red' purges, namely the effort to root out any vestiges of the political left in Spain; as one observer noted, "The scale of repression claimed even in the most conservative accounts would mean that ten individuals, on average, were shot each day through the entire period of seven years from 1939-1945" (Richards 1988, pg. 31). Many of these victims were not buried in

cemeteries, but in mass, unmarked graves, in fields or even along the side of winding country roads. Thousands more fled Spain for the Americas or for France, including the leadership of the UGT, the PSOE, and the PNV. Therefore, by 1945, as the rest of Europe was clearing the debris of war in order to not only rebuild its towns, roads, and bridges, but the foundational institutions of liberal democracy, Spain had consolidated into a fascist regime.

Conclusion

The central problem of early twentieth-century Spain was the fact that rapid socioeconomic change far outpaced political change: the forces of industrialization, working-class mobilization, and urbanization overwhelmed a country where two of the most important political institutions – the monarchy and the Catholic Church – remained essentially unchanged. In essence, it was a classic case of modernization gone awry, per Samuel Huntington's observation:

> Social and economic change – urbanization, increases in literacy and education, industrialization, mass media expansion – extend political consciousness, multiply political demands, broaden political participation. These changes undermine traditional sources of political authority and traditional political institutions; they enormously complicate the problems of creating new bases of political association and new political institutions combining legitimacy and effectiveness. The rates of social mobilization and the expansion of political participation are high; the rates of political organization and institutionalization are low. The result is political instability and disorder. The primary problem of politics is the lag in development of political institutions behind social and economic change. (1968,5).

By 1945, Spain had been utterly transformed. The institutions of the Second Republic were largely reversed: political power was centralized, the use of regional languages prohibited, independent parties and trade unions were banned, and the

political leadership of the various groups united under the Loyalist umbrella were exiled, jailed, and in some cases, executed. No political organizations were allowed to exist beyond those affiliated with the *Movimiento Nacional*, General Franco's coalition of monarchists, Carlists, fascists, militarists and conservative Catholics. Spain's lack of involvement in World War II spared it the devastation of total war, but it also meant exclusion from the process of rebuilding democratic institutions from the ground up. Instead, isolated at the far southwestern corner of Europe, Spain would languish for close to four decades under a regime that both economically and socially fell further and further behind its rapidly changing Northern neighbors. As we will see, however, how Spain broke out of its self-imposed stasis would have profound implications for its future response to mass immigration.

II. Democratization and Development

The noted historian of modern Spain, Paul Preston, characterized the principles of the Franco dictatorship as "belligerent opposition to communism, socialism and liberalism, to democratic pluralism and to any form of regional devolution" (1986:1-2). Not surprisingly, the process of democratization focused exactly on those points: re-opening political space for left-wing parties and unions, committing to pluralistic politics, and the political status of Spain's cultural and political minorities, most notably the Basques and Catalans. The 1978 Spanish constitution, which was ratified by over 90% of the population, addressed these

issues and more. However, the process of reopening Spanish public life to multiple political actors and negotiating the content of the constitution did not occur in a historical vacuum: the chaos and violence of the past acted as a constraint on political behavior in the present. The need to accommodate competing visions of Spanish state-society relations meant that the democratization process was fraught with compromises, some of which were bitter pills to swallow, but the shared desire to avoid the fractious politics of the past kept the process moving forward. These formal and informal institutions would, quite unwittingly, have a significant effect on how Spain's political elites would respond to the unprecedented migration of the 1990s and 2000s.

Spain, left behind

By the 1950s, Spain's economy was in dire straits and, not surprisingly, this shaky economic situation fueled mass emigration: an estimated 2-3 million Spaniards left to seek work in Northern Europe, an outflow that lasted through the oil crisis of the 1970s (Arango and Martin 2005). However, this movement was in addition to the millions of Spaniards who fled to Latin America prior to the civil war. The large (and growing) Spanish diaspora forced the regime's attention on issues of nationality: what could or should happen with the citizenship of Spaniards and their descendants living abroad? In 1954, the government issued a decree clarifying these issues: citizenship rights were extended to the third generation born abroad, and those Spaniards who established citizenship in countries that were

former colonies of Spain would be allowed to hold dual citizenship. The logic behind

the decree was less about connecting with the individuals in the Diaspora and more

about highlighting the special relationship that Spain had with its former colonies:

in other words, it suited the regime's wish to maintain ties to its 'lost empire'

(EUDO 2012).

When it came to economic reforms, however, Spain increasingly looked to

Europe. The 1960s "Spain is different" campaign opened up the economy to

tourism. A new technocratic class affiliated with the conservative Catholic lay

association Opus Dei was deeply interested in economic modernization and began to

take hold of the regime's administrative apparatus. However, liberalization of the

economy could only go so far: Spain's non-democratic regime prevented it from

joining the European Economic Community. Nevertheless, reforms drove

investment, and Spain experienced unprecedented levels of economic growth in the

1960s and early 1970s.

By the 1970s, it was becoming clear that any further economic modernization

would require political modernization as well. Spain was entering a new period of

turbulence: with the oil crisis, workers were no longer placated by a buoyant

economy, and took to the streets despite the risk of violent crackdown. Strikes broke

out across much of the country, facilitated by the still-clandestine *Comisiones*

Obreras (Worker's Commissions, or CCOO) and the reconstituted *Partido*

Comunista Español (Spanish Communist Party, or PCE). In the Basque Country,

young people frustrated both by the Franco regime and what they saw as timidity

from the PNV leadership in exile, led to the formation of Euskadi Ta Askatasuna, better known as ETA, the Basque terrorist organization that gained rising support in the 1970s for targeting key figures of the regime. With ETA's assassination of Franco's prime minister Luis Carrero Blanco in 1974, and the death of Franco himself in 1975, the time seemed ripe for change. But the questions for Spain were, how much change, and how fast?

Moving Towards Democracy

One year after the death of Franco, the newly appointed premier, Adolfo Suárez, with the approval of Juan Carlos, the appointed King of Spain and handpicked heir to Franco, worked to move a Law of Political Reform through the still-single party Cortes, which would open up Spain to multi-party electoral politics. Despite opposition from some within the military and the PCE, it was approved in the legislature and put to a public referendum where it was approved by over 90% of voters, thus officially opening the political system to competitive elections. Old pre-civil war parties like the PNV, PSOE and the PCE were legalized, and other groups scrambled to form new parties and coalitions in order to contest elections in 1977, most notably Suaréz's *Unión de Centro Democrático* (Union of the Democratic Center or UCD), a coalition of Christian Democrats, Liberals and other groups. Unlike the pre-civil war days, the Catholic Church stayed out of party politics, and committed itself to non-partisanship in that and future elections.

The 1977 elections were a watershed moment, not only because they were a huge step towards establishing Spain as a modern democratic society, but because of the strong signal that voters sent to their politicians about the kind of democracy that they wanted it to be. The vast majority of voters – over seventy percent – cast their ballots for centrist parties, namely the center-right UCD and the left-wing PSOE. The PCE, which had been one of the most militant and active political organizations of the left during the dictatorship, only received 9.3% of the vote, and the Alianza Popular (AP), which was made up of Franco loyalists, received 8.5%. Both the far-right (0.6%) and far-left (3.1%) were rejected by voters (Maravall and Santamaría 1986) – a sure sign that Spaniards were moving past the intense polarization that marked their last attempt at electoral politics.

This spirit of centrism and compromise could also be seen in the way that Spain's nascent democracy handled economic policy. Hard decisions needed to be made about government spending and policy, but the street politics and protests late 1960s and early 1970s showed that the CCOO and the PCE had the power and the organizational capacity to be extremely disruptive and confrontational – exactly what the situation did not call for, given the delicacy of the democratization process. The decision was made to get all of the key actors on board with an agreement that would both impose necessary austerity measures, but also pass much-needed reforms to the tax and social security systems. Subsequently, and with the support of the mainstream parties and unions, the Moncloa Pact went into effect in

September 1977.[166] However, economic and social reforms paled before the major

task ahead of the new government: drafting a constitution. All of the old cleavages

of Spanish politics, namely religion, class, center-peripheral conflict, and the

institutions of the state, would need to be addressed while managing to keep a

majority of the parties – and the public – on board. Nevertheless, this process was

facilitated by the spirit of cooperation fostered by the careful inclusion of different

viewpoints and interests in the Moncloa process. Encarnación credits the

generosity of the pact-making process – something that, given the depth of enmity

between these groups historically, was extraordinary - to "an accommodating and

consensus-driven style among politicians born out of political expediency and

political learning" (2005, 194). This new norm would be sorely tested during the

process of drafting and approving a new constitution.

The Spanish Constitution of 1978

The democratization process culminated in the successful passage of the

Spanish Constitution in 1978. While it did restore some of the key principles of the

Second Republic, it also had to take into account the significant interests of groups

on the Nationalist side of the civil war – especially since the Francoist bureaucratic

regime was still largely in place.

---

[166] It is notable that the extremes of the right, left, and nationalist movement all rejected Moncloa: the far-right Alianza Popular, the Fuerza Nueva, which represented the remnants of the right-wing Falange, the anarchist trade union CNT, and the Basque terrorist group ETA.

First and foremost was a commitment to political pluralism. Emerging from an authoritarian state, this is not surprising. However the Constitution explicitly states that parties and trade unions have a right to exist and to be politically active as long as they "respect the Constitution and the law. Their internal structure and their functioning must be democratic" (sec. 6 & 7). The emphasis on not just having active political associations, but active and democratic political associations was a clear nod to both the chaos of the 1930s, and the anti-systemic parties and organizations that still existed at the margins of Spanish political life – and in the case of the Basque Country where ETA and its sympathizers were still active, in the shadows, if not near the center of the region's politics.

However, the commitment to pluralism and political participation go beyond guaranteeing rights for organizations to promoting the participation of individual citizens in political life. Article 9.2 notes:

> It is the responsibility of the public authorities to promote conditions ensuring that freedom and equality of individuals and of the groups to which they belong are real and effective, to remove the obstacles preventing or hindering their full enjoyment, and to facilitate the participation of all citizens in political, economic, cultural and social life.

This clause created space for government, at any level, to intervene in order to support political engagement – yet like much of the constitution, it was also a vague-ish statement of principle rather than a concrete guide to policy.

The constitution also guaranteed regional rights, something that remains one of the most contentious issues in Spain to this day. Article 2 of the Introduction notes that:

The Constitution is based on the indissoluble unity of the Spanish Nation, the common and indivisible homeland of all Spaniards; it recognizes and guarantees the right to self government of the nationalities and regions of which it is composed and the solidarity among them all.

Article 2 had the distinction of both pleasing and enraging the two main constituencies it was meant to address: the military and regional nationalists. Many nationalists found Article 2's declaration about the "indissoluble unity of the Spanish Nation" intolerable. It did not help matters that the PNV was not part of the committee that negotiated the constitution; unhappy with both the process and its outcome, it exhorted Basques to abstain from the constitutional referendum.

Despite these objections, the constitution passed in the legislature, the Cortes, and was approved overwhelmingly by Spanish voters. One of the most striking aspects of the democratization process was the emphasis on pulling – and keeping – both the proposed institutions and the debate around them as close to the center as possible. This was entirely consistent with the Moncloa process. However this centrism was even more incredible considering that despite the fact that both political leaders and the Spanish public were for the most part able to set old hatreds aside for the sake of turning the page on dictatorship, party and ideological allegiance were remarkably stable over time: the election results showed strong correlation between party support in the 1930s and support for the UCD or PSOE in 1977. While people still held onto their general political orientation, and some of the old cleavages were still visible, the exercise of those preferences remained within the boundaries of electoral politics.

Democratization and the Basques

Despite his loathing of their politics, Franco needed the Basques: their mines, mills and banks were crucial to the economy. Therefore, while the state still kept a tight rein on outwards expressions of Basque identity, it did allow the regional economy to thrive, and the economic expansion of the 1960s led to another wave of inward labor migration that was in many ways reminiscent of the influx of migrant workers in the late 19th century: between 1950 and 1970, the population increased from one million to two million people (Balerdi 1997). Once again, workers settled in on the left bank of the Nervión, and although working conditions were not as dire as they were in the heyday of Dolores Ibárruri and the UGT, with only government-approved unions in place, they were not ideal.

While Basque society was undergoing demographic and economic change, the dynamics of Basque nationalist politics, operating clandestinely in the churches and universities of the region, and openly across the border in France, were changing as well. For the PNV in exile, the normalization of US-Spanish relations in the 1950s dealt a blow to Basque diplomatic efforts, and the death of Aguirre, the PNV's long-serving leader, threw the party into disarray. In Euskadi, however, frustration with both the Franco regime and the PNV was growing: for younger Basques, the PNV was seen as too cautious. In 1959 a group of students founded the radical Basque separatist group *Euskadi ta Askatasuna* ('Basque Homeland and Freedom', heretofore referred to as 'ETA'). Like Arana, they saw Spain as the problem, and this view was compounded by the repression foisted upon them by the Franco

dictatorship. This distinction was furthered by the adoption of anti-colonialist ideology and 'third world nationalism' that was increasingly popular in the 1960s (Jauregui 1986): just as the Black Civil Rights movement in the U.S. gave young Catholics in Northern Ireland both an ideological framework and a pathway to action, the anti-colonial struggles of developing countries, most notably Algeria and Cuba, and their legitimization of the use of guerilla warfare to break completely with the colonial power, provided both a compelling narrative and path of action for young Basques who felt that their nation was being 'occupied' by Spain (Ben-Ami 1991).

The young *etarras* also faced the old problem of rising numbers of non-Basque workers, but by the 1960s, the kinds of racist discourse and 'bright' boundary setting championed by Arana seemed anachronistic. Thus began a shift towards a more civic and territorial view of Basque nationalism: the Basque language and Basque residency were seen by a growing number as the markers for members of the nation, rather than racial attributes. In addition, if nationalists hoped to have significant political support, they could not, like Arana, claim that only those who were of the pure Basque 'race' and could trace their families back for generations were Basques, because the region's high levels of economic development demanded a steady influx of outside workers. Therefore, even among the most radical elements of the Basque nationalist movement, the criteria for 'Basque-ness" began to undergo a subtle change: the definition of a Basque shifted from solely being someone whose family was *of* the Basque Country to the possible inclusion of an

individual who was born *in* the Basque Country and who spoke the language. In other words, in the eyes of a growing number of radical nationalists, Basque citizenship shifted from being based on principles of *jus sanguinis* towards a more civic, *jus soli* conceptualization of membership. This began to open the Basque 'imagined community' to the children of this second wave of labor migrants – the grandchildren of sunny Castile born under the grey skies and *sirimiri* of Euskadi.[167]

While the CCOO and the PCE organized strikes and protests, ETA organized direct attacks on the state, including the assassination of state security forces and political figures close to the regime. These attacks provoked a harsh response from the regime, leading to broader public sympathy for ETA and another round of attacks. The most spectacular strike against the regime came in 1973 when ETA assassinated Luis Carrero Blanco, Franco's prime minister. By taking out one of the more hardline officials of the Movimiento, ETA rather inadvertently made the pathway to democracy somewhat shorter and less tenuous than it might have been.

When Suarez moved to legalize political parties, including the PNV, there was a great deal of disagreement in the Basque Country over the extent to which the democratization process should be supported. While the PNV, which identified as a European-style Christian Democratic party supported the transition to democracy, they were unhappy that they were not included on the committee that negotiated the text of the Constitution and that there was no constitutional mechanism for self-determination; subsequently they called for a Basque boycott of

---

[167] *Sirimiri* is a Basque term for a certain kind of rain: more than drizzle, but less than a shower, it seems to simultaneously hang in the air yet coat everything it touches.

the constitutional referendum in December 1978. However, the next major political initiative from Madrid dealt directly with the question of regional autonomy, and offered a new statute of autonomy to the Catalans and Basques that surpassed the rights granted to these regions in the 1930s. The so-called 'Statute of Guernica' created the autonomous community of the Basque Country consisting of Biscay, Gipuzcoa and Álava, and established a legislature for this community (with the *lehendakari* as its president) that would have devolved powers over education, taxation, and policing, among other policy areas. Despite their stance on the Constitution, the PNV came out in support of the Statute, and once the Basque government was established, went on to dominate the regional elections for the next three decades; since the statute passed, there has only been one lehendakari that was not a PNV representative.

For ETA, however, autonomy was insufficient: their end goal was an independent Basque state. Subsequently, they continued their operations, not only against the Spanish state, but against Basque politicians, journalists, academics, and even artists who dated to criticize either ETA or the radical Basque left organizations known as the *abertzale izquierda* ('patriot left'). Therefore, although the modernization and democratization process opened up the Basque nation far beyond what 19th century hardline nationalists like Arana could have imagined, and the newly formed Spanish government along with Basque representatives were able to develop institutions of autonomy beyond what Aguirre and the PNV were able to

negotiate in the 1930s, in their moment of Spain's democratic triumph, Basque civil society remained overshadowed by violence.

Conclusion

Spain spent most of the nineteenth and much of the twentieth century ripping itself apart. By the 1970s, the great challenge for its political leaders was figuring out how to stitch the country back together again. Despite the enthusiasm for change in the wake of Franco's death, Spain was also a deeply tired country: tired of extremism, of chaos, and of state control over every aspect of economic and political life. Given the circumstances, it is not surprising that the democratization process was notable for both its constraint on the part of political elites and voters, and for the development of legislative and electoral institutions meant to ensure access to political life for a diverse set of actors. However, this process really left Spain with two institutional legacies: the *formal* institutions laid out in the Constitution, and the *informal* institutions of political engagement, namely the principles of constrain, compromise, and consultation. These informal institutions of engagement arose directly from the historical memory of the chaotic Second Republic and the fratricidal civil war.

This shift to a far more temperate form of politics was consistent with what Huntington saw as the solution to the problem of political order identified at the beginning of this section:

> In a society of any complexity, the relative power of groups changes, but if the society is to be a community, the power of each group is exercised through political

institutions which temper, moderate, and redirect that power so as to render the dominance of one social force compatible with the community of many (1968, 9).

There are two notable caveats, however. First was the situation in the Basque Country. Second was the issue of the *pacto de olvido*, the pact of forgetting. One of the most bitter pills the Spanish left was forced to swallow in the process of democratization was the amnesty granted to former leaders and functionaries of the Franco regime. There was no 'peace and reconciliation' process, or truth commission – yet thousands of bodies remained buried in unmarked mass graves across Spain. What made this situation particularly painful was the fact that in small towns like Rociana, where even the local priest called for a merciless crackdown on the left, everyone knew where the bodies were buried, and had a good idea of who put them there, but nobody could say anything. This historical memory is one that would remain locked away for over two decades before people decided that they did not want to forget anymore, and in the 2000s, the debate over the loss and exile experienced by the left in the past would eventually become part and parcel of the citizenship and migration debate in the present.

Despite the still lingering issues of its painful past, the 1990s were a time of tremendous outwards optimism. With its entrance into the European Community in 1986 (the precursor to the European Union), the signing of the 1992 Maastricht Treaty, and its announcement that it planned to join the euro, the once pariah state of Western Europe no longer seemed so different. While unemployment peaked in 1994 at close to 24%, it steadily moved downwards for the rest of the decade, and by 2000 was down to just under 14% [Figure 6.1]. European transfer funds allowed

Spain to invest in major transportation infrastructure upgrades, physically linking

what is not only a culturally but geographically diverse country.

Spaniards not only embraced the European project with both hands, but

moved to what it saw as its rightful place on the European and world stage.

Barcelona hosted the 1992 Summer Olympics, and the images of divers soaring in

the air against the backdrop of the sparkling Mediterranean and the unfinished

steeples of Gaudí's *Sagrada Familia* were not only spectacular, but sparked a

tourism craze that has yet to abate. Chefs in the Basque Country and Catalonia

were attracting the world's attention; San Sebastián, the capital of Gipuzkoa is said

to have more Michelin-starred restaurants per capita than any other city. Although

the cloud of terrorism still hung over the Basque Country, even gritty, industrial

Bilbao presented a new face to the world: the Frank Gehry-designed Guggenheim

Museum opened on the banks of the Nervión in 1997, its shining, silver façade

attracting global attention to what was long an impossibly dirty city. A newly

confident Spain was, at long last, a place of interest for reasons beyond grinding

poverty, anachronistic government, or political oppression. Not surprisingly, among

the interested were migrant workers.

III.   **Migration and Political Incorporation in Spain**

Up until the 1990s, immigration was virtually non-existent in Spain: most of

the foreign population at that time consisted of German and British retirees living

along the coast. This was not only due to the political situation, but the weakness of

the economy: double-digit unemployment has long been a problem for the Spanish, and therefore there was little to entice foreigners to the country long-term besides sunshine and a low cost of living.

In the 1990s, however, this began to change. First, the unemployment rate began to fall: while it peaked at nearly 24% in 1994, it was down to 14.8% in 2000, and by 2005 was in single-digits for the first time since democratization [Figure 6.1]. As the unemployment rate began to fall, migration picked up [Figure 6.2]. In 1998, immigrants were still less than 2% of the country overall [Table 6.1] – not surprising given that unemployment was still around 18%. However, if the entry of immigrants was a trickle in the 1990s, it turned into a flood in the 2000s. Between 1998 and 2001, the immigrant population doubled, to 3.3% of the overall population, and two years later, it had nearly doubled again. In 2007, this figure broke double-digits, reaching 10.6% of the population, before maxing out in 2009 at 11.7% of the population. In absolute terms, the number of immigrants in Spain went from 637,085 in 1998 to just under 5.3 million in 2008, a remarkable increase by any measure.

Where did these immigrants come from? This too changed over time. Before migration took off in the late 1990s, most foreigners were Northern Europeans. By 2002, this had changed: 36.4% of Spain's immigrants hailed from Central and South America, while only 24.8% came from the European Union [Table 6.2]. An additional 21.4% were from Africa, with the majority hailing from Morocco. However, over the course of the decade, the distribution of sending states changed,

as Eastern Europeans began arriving en masse: in 2002, Ecuadorans were the largest immigrant group, but by 2012, they had fallen to fourth overall, with Romanians taking over the top spot [Table 6.3]. Bulgaria was not even in the Top 10 in 2002, but by 2012, the number of Bulgarians living in Spain (151,475) surpassed the number of Portuguese (121,271) - a population that is historically, geographically and linguistically much closer to Spain.

These changes in migration flows were not always followed by changes to migration policy. The biggest issue was the fact that it was not only difficult to obtain a work permit, but even more difficult to maintain legal status: several studies of migration in the 1990s note that the temporary work permit system for non-EU immigrants created a situation where people slid in and out of legality; subsequently, despite the permit system – or, perhaps more accurately, because of it - they cycled in and out of the black market for migrant labor (Calavita 1998; Watts 2002).

With a large number of undocumented migrants, and a seeming inability to streamline the immigration system, the Spanish government turned to periodic regularizations – i.e. amnesties – for undocumented workers. However, once inside of Spain, there was a second key policy question at hand: would – or could – new immigrants become a part of civic life?

Citizenship

Here, a clear distinction needs to be drawn between immigration law and citizenship law. Because Spanish immigration law, like most EU countries, has made freedom of movement among EU member states easier while making it harder for outsiders to enter the country, it has come under fire for marginalizing non-European immigrants. Kitty Calavita argued that Spanish immigration laws "systematically marginalized Third World immigrants but do not stem their immigration" (1998, 538). But in the 1990s, most of the Third World immigrants in Spain were Moroccan migrant workers, and their numbers were still quite low. In the 2000s, however, the composition of migration changed: Latin Americans came to dominate immigration flows until the mid 2000s when Eastern Europeans began arriving in large numbers. This distinction is important, because while *migration* laws clearly favor Europeans, *citizenship* laws are not so black and white, and have dramatically different implications for different groups of immigrants from poor countries.

However, another distinction needs to be drawn here because it comes up in the administration and debate around citizenship and residency laws in Spain: the distinction between *legal* citizenship and *political* citizenship. Legal citizenship at its most basic level is the right to carry the passport of a specific country. Political citizenship refers to the right to participate in politics either as a voter, as an elected official, or as a member of organized interest associations (Marshall 1964). This distinction is key because unlike Ireland's universal approach to electoral participation whereby any foreigner can register to vote, access to political life in

Spain is contingent on migration status and country of origin. Therefore, I take a more expansive view of citizenship when analyzing the Spanish case than the Irish case because in Ireland – with the exception of national elections - legal citizenship has no bearing on the exercise of political citizenship.

Incredibly, and despite both the restoration of democracy and an unprecedented influx of foreigners over the last two decades, the changes to Spanish citizenship laws have been minimal, and some of the few changes that made it into law were not targeted at Spain's new arrivals, but rather addressed the issue of Spaniards and their descendants living abroad. Like so much else, this turn to the past was, in part, driven by civil war politics. However, migration flows were such that they could not be ignored, prompting a number of regularizations. As migration patterns began to change, the opportunities for citizenship that emerged as part of Spaniards' attempts to reconcile their history began to converge with the regularization of immigrants from beyond the European Union, thus opening a pathway to citizenship for many – not all, but many – of Spain's new immigrants.

Citizenship, migration 'policy', and amnesty, 1982-2005

In Spain, citizenship-related issues were traditionally managed not through constitutional law but civil law, with the Civil Code of 1889 guiding policy since its inception. The two cornerstones of the legislation were 1) access to Spanish

citizenship through one's parents (*jus sanguinis*) – critical, given Spain's high levels of emigration - and 2) the ability of a child born on Spanish soil to foreign parents to claim Spanish citizenship when they reached adulthood (a form of *jus soli*). Spanish civil law also carried a residency requirement of ten years for immigrants to qualify for Spanish citizenship. This state of affairs remained relatively unchanged for most of the twentieth century, other than a Franco-era reform that allowed emigrants to maintain their Spanish citizenship if they took dual citizenship in a former colony of the Empire (EUDO 2012).

Not surprisingly, given the multiple issues at hand, citizenship was not high on the agenda of Spain's political parties during the transition to democracy, and for the first few years of its existence, Spain's nascent, modern democracy relied on 19th century civil codes for its citizenship and migration laws. It was not until 1982 that Spain underwent its first round of reforms aimed at nationality and citizenship laws. It maintained the ten-year rule of residency in order to acquire citizenship, but shortened this period to two years for citizens from places that had historical ties to Spain: Andorra, Equatorial Guinea, and Latin America (Ley 51/1982, Art. 22). This was consistent with the established practice of treating countries with which Spain had long-standing historical relationships differently when it came to citizenship issues. In addition to the extension of citizenship rights outwards, under the new law, anyone born within Spanish territory was entitled to citizenship after one year. Therefore, the first reforms reflected principles of both *jus soli* and cultural affinity in citizenship policy.

In 1985, the PSOE proposed the *Ley Organica sobre Derechos y Libertades de los Extranjeros en Espana* (Organic Law of Rights and Freedoms of Foreigners in Spain). At the time, Spain was under pressure from its neighbors for being a rather porous entry point into the European Community. Subsequently, the PSOE's immigration reforms were surprisingly harsh: visa requirements were imposed for most non-European immigrants and undocumented workers would not have the same right of assembly, access to education, or ability to join a union as natives or even immigrants with papers (article 7, 9, 9 and 10). Interestingly, that same year, and in the spirit of concertation, the Spanish government established the *Consejo General de la Emigración* (General Council for Emigration) that was designed to represent the interests of the over five million Spaniards (and their descendants) that had left the country over the course of the twentieth century. For the Spanish government, the biggest migration-related issue was still people leaving, not entering.

Between 1985 and 2000, there were no major changes to Spanish citizenship and nationality laws. However, there were major changes in the immigrant population, which more than doubled during this time to just under a million people. With few guidelines and few restrictions on movement, the undocumented population grew, and in 1991, the Spanish government passed an amnesty whereby 108,000 people were granted residency permits. However, the same year, the government also imposed visa requirements on the citizens of key sending states, including Morocco. Spain also became a signatory to the Schengen Agreement,

allowing freedom of movement within the European Union. Therefore, over the course of the year, the government both opened access to the labor market and residency for those already there, yet closed off access for 'non-favored' groups, a process that would remain a common tension in negotiations over citizenship and residency requirements.

Despite the lack of major legislative changes, the debates about the migration issue, and the policies that were proposed (and rejected) were somewhat useful in that they began to draw out the parties' different positions on migration. For the PSOE, once EU requirements were met, the most important issue was that immigration policy encouraged integration, and for them the best way to do that was to insure that immigrants had legal standing. With legal residency, immigrants could register on the *Padrón* of the local *Ayuntamiento* (municipal government), a process in Spain called *empadronamiento*. To register oneself (*'empadronarse'*) meant that an individual could have access to local state-run medical services and could register their children for school. Being on the *padrón* also gave local officials a headcount with which to make budget decisions, and gave national officials an idea of population changes between census periods. However, even more important than municipal registration was the fact that proof of residency was required for citizenship, and appearing on the *Padrón* was a way to log the reality of one's presence in the eyes of the state. While much of the public debate around amnesties was about immigrants and the labor market, the ability to establish residency was essentially the first step on the pathway to citizenship –

hence why it was so contested. Finally, in addition to Spain's new labor migrants,

the PSOE was concerned about the citizenship rights of Spaniards who had left the

country since the 1930s, many under political or economic duress.

The Spanish right had a different view on immigration, but they were also in

a period of transition. Under Franco, nationality law mattered insomuch as it

maintained cultural and legal ties to the countries of the former empire. However,

the modern realities of Spain's modernizing economy refocused the right's attention

inwards. In 1989, the *Partido Popular* (Popular Party, heretofore referred to as the

PP or 'Populares'), was formed out of the remnants of Adolfo Suárez's now-defunct

UCD, and it quickly staked out its position on both the citizenship and the

migration issue. Like the Republican party in the United States, the PP faced

internal tension between the law-and-order wing of the party and the business

wing: undocumented migration was bad for state security, but good for securing

cheap, pliable workers. The PP was also mindful of EU directives: having ushered

Spain into the euro zone, its leaders often looked to see what their neighbors were

doing in regards to immigration, and then used these practices as a model for

incorporative activity (or restrictive policy) at home.

The smaller parties also staked out their positions during this time. Notably,

the IU and the PNV were very supportive of both immigration and access to legal

and political citizenship, and during the 1990s, both parties issued legal

propositions in the Congreso in order to address their concerns about migration.

These propositions – officially listed as a "Proposición de ley de Grupos

Parlamentarios" are a particularly useful tool for gaining insight into the political

thought process of Spanish parties because they require an "explanation of motives"

at the start of the Proposition, followed by a detailed proposal of changes to the law.

For the IU, the fundamental problem with Spanish migration and citizenship law

was the issue of equal rights:

> Equal rights are what ought to be the fundamental base of a democratic society. To
> deprive fundamental rights to people who live in a stable way in our territory for
> reasons of origin would be to put in question one of the basic principles of the
> democratic system...[168]

Subsequently, the IU proposed in 1998 that immigrants with three years of

residency be allowed to vote in municipal elections.

> The recognition of the right to active and passive suffrage for the municipal elections
> for those people that demonstrate their willingness to continue living in one of the
> Spanish municipalities would be the greatest demonstration of affirmation that
> citizens and foreigners belong to the same community, demonstrating, in this way,
> the intention to be guided by the principle of integration of all inhabitants of the
> territory of the Spanish state.[169]

The PNV and the IU also both called for a reduction in the residency period

in order to qualify for citizenship (Marín et. al. 2012).

On political and ideological grounds, this convergence would appear to be

quite puzzling: the IU is a left-wing party composed of the remnants of the PCE and

other groups with historical ties to the far-left radicals of the 1930s Republican

movement, while the PNV is a Christian Democratic party that has maintained

close ties to the Catholic Church and Basque businessmen. In other words, these

two parties are on opposite sides of some of Spain's historic cleavages. Yet there are

---

[168] Cortes de España, Proposición de Ley (1998), 175-1.
[169] Cortes de España, Proposición de Ley (1998), 176-1.

two key factors that unite these parties. First was their support for the short-lived

Republican government in the 1930s. Second was their experience of repression

under the Franco regime: the Basques were crushed and their language and culture

outlawed, while the ranks of the far left-wing were decimated by "red purges", with

partisans subject to ritual public humiliation, forced labor, and death squads. For

the IU, support for the political equality of immigrants was entirely consistent with

both the current mission of the party and its historic ties to the republican

movement of the 1930s:

> The United Left is a Social and Political Movement that is formed in a legal
> organization and politically sovereign, whose objective is to gradually transform the
> capitalist system into a democratic socialist system, based on the principles of
> justice, equality, solidarity and respect for nature and organized in accordance with
> a social and democratic State of federal and republican law.[170]

Therefore, having been the victims of some of the worst intolerance of the

twentieth century, the PNV and IU did their best to put a tolerant face on policies

affecting Spain's new outsiders, namely immigrants.[171] And not only did they

support thee policies in the Cortes, but the PNV and IU also worked closely together

on developing institutions within the Basque Country to facilitate incorporation,

including a multi-party forum (*foro*) to discuss migration-related policy and an

observatorio, an independent statistical agency linked to a local university with a

---

[170] The party mission statement is available on its website: http://www.izquierda-unida.es/laorganizacion [accessed July 2013].
[171] For an in-depth discussion of incorporative activity within the Basque Country, see Sanjay Jeram, "Immigration and Minority Nationalism: The Basque Country in Comparative Perspective." PhD diss., University of Toronto, 2012.

mandate to 1) monitor migration flows and issues in a non-partisan way and 2) issue reports that could then be used by policymakers to respond to issues.[172]

While none of the main proposals of the 1990s made it into law, the public debate around them did lead to some administrative changes. In 1996, a royal decree allowed for the regularization of over 25,000 applicants and lengthened the time period for work permits, thus making it easier for immigrant workers to maintain their legal status. In 1997, the government issued a resolution clarifying that municipal governments (*ayuntamientos*) should register immigrants, regardless of their migration status (BOE 1997 117/97). The main objective of the resolution was to "dictate technical instructions to the municipal government", in order to enhance data collection procedures for the Instituto Nacional de Estadistica (INE), the National Institute of Statistics (Spain's census bureau), which was a signatory.

The next major changes to citizenship and migration law happened in 1999 and 2000. In 1999, the PP was in the unfortunate position of being the largest party in the Cortes, but unable to form a government majority. Therefore, the PSOE was able to move a legal reform through the legislature in April of 2000 that both made it easier to gain residency and join political organizations – in other words, they widened the pathway to *political* citizenship. This legal overhaul focused less on migration laws, and more on the process of integration, which was now the main concern of the party. First, the law granted political citizenship to the undocumented: the right to assemble, join a union, or strike to anyone, was granted

---

[172] Both a foro and an observatorio were established at the national level in the 1990s.

to all foreigners in Spain "sin necesidad de autorización" ("without the need for authorization", Articles 7, 8, 11). In addition, it took an expansive view of family reunification, making allowances not only for spouses, but for whatever other family member whose presence in Spain could be justified 'for humanitarian reasons' (Article 17.e).

The PP was strongly opposed to the new law, and after winning an absolute majority in the Cortes that year, they set about overturning key aspects of it. The first objection was to granting universal political citizenship; for the PP, these were rights that should be reserved for those who had legal status. Subsequently, Articles 7, 8 and 11 were revised to add that the rights of individual immigrants "could be exercised when they obtain authorization or residence in Spain".[173] Second, in changing some of the text, the revised legislation made note of Spain's obligations to its European partners: reminders that Spain was subject to "the provisions of special laws and international treaties" were emphasized throughout the text [Article 1.2]. Finally, the extension of family reunification was restricted to more immediate family members. Yet despite these limitations, the PP made a clear commitment to political and social incorporation: it reaffirmed the constitutional clause that the state had some responsibility for the promotion of civic participation, and the PP took this to mean that "public authorities" should try to strengthen immigrant NGOs in order to "promote social integration" (Article 69). It also explicitly recognized the role of the *Foro* (Forum for the Social Integration of

---

[173] Ley Orgánica, 8/2000, Article 7.

Immigrants) in the process of political incorporation, and dubbed it "the organ of consultation, information and advice on the integration of immigrants" (Article 70).

The PSOE was not impressed. First, the Socialists were upset because they thought that the restrictions in the law would create a situation that would require another massive amnesty in the future. However, they were also disturbed by the fact that Aznar refused to work with the PSOE in order to form a social pact on the immigration issue – a clear deviation from the approach to big social problems in the 1970s and 1980s (PSOE 2002). While they did not have much of a leg to stand on for the latter, given their changes pushed through in the 4/2000 version of the legislation, they were right about the former: the PP approved two amnesties: one in 2000 that regularized 200,000 immigrants, and another a year later that regularized 230,000 (Sabater and Domingo 2010).

In 2004, in the wake of the Madrid bombings, the PSOE made a surprise last-minute surge and won the general elections.[174] That year alone, the number of immigrants in Spain increased by an additional 500,000, and the government came under growing pressure from a variety of political and social actors to enact another mass amnesty. *The Guardian* reported that both trade unions and employers supported the amnesty program, with one employer telling the paper that "he was

[174] On March 11, 2004, several bombs went off across the Madrid commuter rail like, killing 191 people and wounding over 1,800 more. The attacks were initially attributed to ETA, but Moroccan Islamic extremists were later charged with the crime. The bombings are widely credited with changing the course of the general elections, which took place three days later: while the PP was polling ahead of the PSOE before the bombings, the PP's handling of the bombing, and Aznar's insistence that the perpetrators were Basques, despite growing evidence to the contrary, swung the elections to the PSOE in the last hours before ballots were cast.

pleased to be taking his workers out of the black economy. 'I'm very happy with them,' he said. "I'll hire as many immigrants as possible...they are punctual and do what they set out to do'".[175] The PP, now in opposition, bitterly opposed a further regularization despite the fact that they themselves had legalized close to 500,000 workers during their eight years in power. Over their objections the amnesty was approved, and in 2005 over 700,000 immigrants applied to regularize their status.

Garcia Lorca's dead and the citizenship question

With the amnesty behind them, the focus of the citizenship debate – to the extent that one existed – again shifted outside of Spanish borders. In 2006, the government passed the *Estatuto de la ciudadania española en el exterior* (Statute of Spanish citizenship in the Exterior) that granted a series of social and political rights to Spanish emigrants, including the right to participate in elections, access to pensions, and assistance to return to Spain. A report by the European Union Democracy Observatory notes that the government took up the issue at the behest of the General Counsel for Emigration (the organization established in the 1980s). While this statute addressed how to help Spanish citizens and their descendants living abroad, it did not really address the question of how or where their citizenship rights could or would be exercised, or why they left in the first place. And as Spain's democracy consolidated, and its citizens grew more confident in its durability, fewer people were willing to maintain the *pacto de olvido* regarding the

---

[175] Giles Tremlett, "Spain grants amnesty to 700,000 migrants", *Guardian* (UK) 8 May 2005.

conditions under which hundreds of thousands of people fled the country in the 1930s and the early years of the dictatorship.

In late 2006, the PSOE government proposed a *Ley de Memoria Histórica*, the Law of Historical Memory. The law was meant to address issues relating to the Spanish civil war and the victims of the Franco regime, and it included a citizenship component: anyone whose family members were forced to flee the country due to political persecution after the fall of the Second Republic was eligible to apply for Spanish citizenship. Informally dubbed the *Ley de Nietos* ('Law of the Grandchildren'), the legislation explicitly referred to the need to make whole those families that had "lost their fatherland". Whereas any movement to offer redress – in any form – to victims of the Franco regime and their families was always going to be controversial due to the *pacto de olvido*, the *Ley de Nietos* was particularly radical because it granted citizenship on the basis of historical political membership, rather than simple blood ties. It also granted this citizenship without the applicant ever having set foot in Spain.

The proposal caused a firestorm. The Partido Popular was outraged, arguing that the PSOE, and in particular the party leader José Luis Rodríguez Zapatero, was reopening old wounds at the risk of dividing the country. José María Aznar, now out of government, complained that the PSOE was violating the "constitutional pact" that was the basis for the last thirty years of Spain's progress (EFE 2007). However, the PNV and the IU (along with the CiU and the Canary Coalition, or CC) supported the legislation in the Cortes, and with the passage of the law, over

500,000 people applied for Spanish citizenship.[176] However, the strong reaction to the proposal suggested that the scars of the civil war still ran deep; the question of immigration, while contentious, carries nowhere near the level of emotion or anger that these old battles spark amongst Spaniards.

Conclusion

Despite significant social, economic and political changes over the years, Spanish citizenship laws have been remarkably consistent: the government – whether run by the PP or the PSOE - favors those who have historic ties to Spain, and everyone else has to be a legal resident for a number of years to be able to apply. Most attempts to lessen the residency requirement - pushed primarily by the IU - have not received support from either the PSOE (when in government) or the PP, and have therefore not made it through the Cortes to become law. Where the PSOE has decided to taken up the issue of easier access to citizenship, it has been in opposition to the PP.

On the other hand, Spain's *migration* laws have been quite turbulent. Spain's immigration 'policy' – whether proposed by the PSOE or the PP - has essentially been to run a mass regularization every few years, with the party in government arguing that the best way to integrate immigrants into Spanish society is to bring them out of the shadows, and the other party arguing that this amounted to an open-door policy and would just lead to chaos. Even when they seem to be on

---

[176] Miguel González, "España suma casi 250.000 nuevos nacionales gracias a la 'ley de nietos'," *El País* March 30 2012, online at:
http://politica.elpais.com/politica/2012/03/30/actualidad/1333132776_885506.html.

opposite sides of the same issue, the PSOE and PP often reach a similar outcome:
the special treatment of Latin Americans under Spanish citizenship law (and
conversely, Spaniards and their descendants living in Latin America) has been
maintained because it has at varying times suited the political objectives of both the
political right (ties to the former empire, cultural compatibility of the immigrant
population), and of the political left (reparations for the Civil War and exile).

This stability has seemingly locked non-'favored' immigrants out of a
pathway to citizenship. However, the implications of this approach have changed
over time as the composition of migration flows has changed. Since 1986, Spain
has approved six amnesties. To the extent that immigrants could avoid falling into
undocumented status again (a serious problem in the 1990s), amnesties provided a
pathway to citizenship. But this pathway depended largely on an immigrant's
country of origin. As Spanish parties on the right and left moved to tighten their
relationship with Latin America, the pathway to citizenship for immigrants from
this critical sending region eased considerably, from five years to two years – the
length of some work permits. Over time this meant that a rising number of
immigrants were eligible for citizenship: while immigration figures in the 1990s
were dominated by retired Europeans, and North African agricultural workers were
the second-largest immigrant group, in the 2000s Latin Americans came to
dominate, and by 2006, they made up close to a third of all immigrants in Spain
[Table 2]. Therefore, in comparison to the 1990s, when studies of migration law in
Spain lamented the fact that people from 'Third World' countries were being

excluded, changes in both citizenship law and the composition of migration flows mean that immigrants from the largest group of developing country sending states will have access to Spanish citizenship – as long as the labor market is stable enough to support the maintenance of a work permit and residency.

These changes were not universally popular. The frequency of government amnesties and the shortening of the pathway to citizenship for some of Spain's largest sending states for migrants deeply alarmed the PP. However, they also alarmed migrant rights organizations. The automatic right to residency and access to the labor market for European immigrants, and the relative ease with which Latin Americans could gain access to citizenship meant that there were clear emerging – and hardening - hierarchies of migration status. In 2006, the year after the last major amnesty, EU and Latin American immigrants were almost 70% of the migrant population. EU citizens do not need Spanish citizenship to work or gain residency, and Latin Americans have an accelerated naturalization process. This still leaves a large chunk of the immigrant population who face a long road to citizenship: Spanish law still requires ten years of residency for 'non-favored' immigrants in order to be eligible for citizenship. Sub-Saharan African immigrants are particularly disadvantaged, even by the amnesty system: because so many of them make a living as *manteros*, the street vendors who sell bootleg DVDs and fake designer handbags on blankets laid along the sidewalks of Spain's major cities, they find it difficult, if not impossible, to collect and provide the kind of documentation necessary to qualify for the amnesty programs. The one bright spot in this situation

is the fact that the children of immigrants who are born in Spanish territory are eligible for citizenship after one year. Therefore, while the road to citizenship may be long for the parents, there will not be legal or institutional barriers to the civic inclusion of their children – a problem that plagues many other European countries.

That said, what makes the citizenship debate in Spain interesting, particularly in comparison to other European countries, is that it has by and large been more about who immigrants are, rather than who they are not. Unlike Austria, Switzerland, or France, you will not hear mainstream political parties in Spain making claims that equate to "Spain for the Spaniards". This is in part due to the fact that it is not clear what this would even mean in a country that has such a contested history over this very question. But it is also in part attributable to historical memory, and the dangerous path that acting 'in the name of the Spanish nation' – or more recently, acting in the name of the Basque nation – led to: in one case, a civil war and four decades of dictatorship, and in the other, a violent separatist movement that not only carried out appalling murders in the name of *Euskal Herria* (the term for the greater Basque community in both Spain and France), but dampened free speech and full engagement in Basque civil society for decades. In a country where there is still a living memory of the fascist chant "España! Una! España! Grande! España! Libre!" ('Spain, one, great, and free'), there is not a great deal of political tolerance for an overtly nationalistic approach to citizenship and immigration policy – or the unilateral imposition of these policies without consultation.

To some extent, this may be changing. Both the PSOE and the PP accuse each other of violating the norm of consultation that was traditionally central to addressing major policy issues. But despite their bickering, neither of Spain's two largest parties have been able to make radical changes to either citizenship or migration policy while in office, and it is not clear why or how this would change in the future, especially as citizenship law is civil rather than constitutional, meaning that it would be quite easy for whoever won the next election to quickly overturn any change that had not been made with full buy-in and support from the other parties (as proven by the PP in 2000). In addition, Spain's system of proportional representation means that the PP and PSOE usually have to go into coalition with one of the smaller parties in order to form a government – and as we have seen, two of the three smaller parties, the IU and the PNV, are relatively liberal on immigration matters. While it is hard to imagine that the left-wing IU would ever go into government with the right-wing PP, the PNV has gone into government with both the PSOE and the PP; therefore both parties have to deal with the likelihood of a moderate partner in government when it comes to immigration policy.

Electoral Politics and Incorporative Activity

By 2006, the foreign-born population of Spain had reached over 4.5 million people – nearly 10% of the population - and there were growing questions about the role of Spain's immigrant population in civic life. This was a particularly timely issue coming on the heels of the massive 2005 regularization. Some provisions

existed to allow migrant access to electoral politics: like all EU member states,

Spain granted local voting rights to other EU citizens. With large numbers of

Germans and British retirees along the Mediterranean coast, and a growing

number of Romanians across the country, this meant that approximately 34% of the

foreign-born population was eligible to vote in municipal elections.[177] However,

Spain's largest immigrant groups, Latin Americans and Moroccans, were still shut

out of electoral politics if they did not have citizenship.

With these demographic changes in mind, in 2006 the IU-ICV[178] filed an

official proposition in the Congreso, the lower house of the Spanish legislature, to

extend local voting rights to non-EU immigrants as well. Surprisingly, this proposal

was not so far-fetched: Article 13 of the Spanish constitution makes reference to the

political rights of non-citizens:

1. Aliens shall enjoy the public freedoms guaranteed by the present Title, under the terms to be laid down by treaties and the law
2. Only Spaniards shall be entitled to the rights recognized in Article 23, *except in cases which may be established by treaty or by law concerning the right to vote and the right to be elected in municipal elections, in accordance with the principle of reciprocity.*[179]

At issue, however, was the question of 'reciprocity': this seemed to suggest that if

other countries granted voting rights to Spaniards, their citizens would have the

same rights in Spain. Because there are few countries outside of the European

---

[177] Here I use the number of EU-27 citizens over the age of twenty as the pool of eligible voters. The data is from 2007 and from the INE website.
[178] The IU-ICV is the coalition of the Izquierda Unida (United Left) and the Iniciativa per Catalunya Verds (Catalonia Greens Initiative).
[179] [Article 13.1-2, italics added. Article 23 states that: "Citizens have the right to participate in public affairs, directly or through representatives freely elected in periodic elections by universal suffrage. They likewise have the right to access on equal terms to public office, in accordance with the requirements determined by law".

Union that allow for non-citizen voting - New Zealand, the best-known example, is not a major sending states for immigrants to Spain! – this meant that the Spanish government would have to negotiate bilateral agreements with key sending states to ensure that their citizens could vote in Spain and vice versa.[180]

Given these parameters, and the uncertainty around how far these rights could actually be extended, the IU-ICV asked for the legislature to 1) secure bilateral agreements with the largest sending states, 2) obtain legal clarification on the reciprocity issue, and 3) sign and ratify a 1992 European convention that supports the participation of immigrants in civic life.[181] Yet even this proposal mentioned the special position of Latin Americans, noting that the government should not only pursue bilateral agreements with the major sending countries, but "especially with those like the Latin American countries, with whom we have greater historical, cultural and affective ties" (pg. 18).

The IU-ICV proposal found enormous support among immigrant-serving NGOs, and many launched public campaigns in support of the right to vote for all immigrants. The trade unions not only supported voting rights for immigrants, but went beyond the proposal to demand voting rights regardless of reciprocity. The UGT went so far as to call for local voting rights after two years of residency and national voting rights after five years of residency; the latter would allow 'non-

---

[180] New Zealand and Uruguay both allow for universal non-citizen voting rights for all elections, but Uruguay has a fifteen year waiting period.
[181] Congreso de los Diputados, "Proposición no de Ley presentada por los Grupos Parlamentos Socialista del Congreso y de Izquierda Unida-Iniciativa per Catalunya Verds, sobre la extension del derecho a voto, en last elecciones municipals, a los extranjeros residents legales," 162/000509, num. 428 (2006).

favored' immigrants that had to wait for ten years to naturalize to have access to political citizenship while waiting for legal citizenship.[182] However, there were concerns among NGOs that the government would not be able, for constitutional reasons, to sign agreements with all major sending countries: the structure of Article 13 meant that citizens of non-democracies living in Spain would not ever be eligible for voting rights as a non-democratic government was unlikely to grant Spaniards local voting rights. Given the composition of Spain's immigrant population, this was no minor omission: almost 15% of Spain's immigrants were from Morocco alone, and close to 30% of the immigrant population hailed from African or Asian countries where these kinds of reciprocal agreements were unlikely for political reasons.[183] Given all of the concern in Europe about alienation and a lack of incorporation amongst second-generation Muslim immigrants, it seems odd and counterproductive that Spain's second-largest immigrant group, which also happened to be Muslim, did not have the right to vote.

After some dithering before the 2007 round of municipal elections where they decided that there was not enough time to make the necessary arrangements, in 2008 the PSOE government announced the appointment of a Special Ambassador, Gonzalo de Benito Secades, to negotiate the necessary bilateral agreements with key sending states whose constitutions made them eligible to grant non-citizen voting rights. However, because the Spanish constitution was so

---

[182] 'CCOO y UGT piden que puedan votar los inmigrantes con 5 años en España," *El Periódico de Cataluña*, August 22 2006.
[183] For example, the majority of Asians in Spain are Chinese, and as China is not a democracy, reciprocity would be impossible. According to the INE, the Chinese were the sixth largest immigrant group in Spain in 2012, with a population of 170,839.

vague on the issue, there was some concern that the PSOE initiative was unconstitutional. Jesús Quiljano, a PSOE spokesman, admitted that the government's interpretation of the law was *"amplia y flexible"* ("broad and flexible"), but insisted that the main motivation of the party was to insure that political inclusion in Spain's democracy was maximized.[184]

This move was met with some skepticism. The IU, normally close working partners with the PSOE on migration-related matters, grumbled that the Socialists were just rehashing their proposal that they put forward two years ago. Back then, the largest Catalan nationalist party, CiU, was adamantly opposed to the proposal, arguing that Catalonia "is not in a position to give political rights" and that the plan was "irresponsible"; in contrast, the ICV (Catalonia's Green Party), called this position "xenophobic and ethnocentric".[185] The response from the PP was mixed, largely for political reasons. On a trip to Berlin to meet with Angela Merkel ahead of the Spanish general election scheduled for March 2008, Mariano Rajoy, the national leader of the party, stated that he opposed extending the right to vote to anyone, but would be open to some kind of common plan of integration with the rest of Europe to allow for immigrant political rights.[186] However, this was contrary to what some PP officials were saying at the municipal level – i.e. the level at which

---

[184] "El Congreso ratifica nueve de los convenios que podrían sumar 650.000 electores inmigrantes en las municipals de 2011," *Europa Press online,* October 29 2009. Available at: http://www.europapress.es/epsocial/politica-social/noticia-congreso-ratifica-nueve-convenios-podrian-sumar-650000-electores-inmigrantes-municipales-2011-20091029152736.html.

[185] "Para CiU, el voto inmigrantes amenaza el proyecto de país Cataluña," *20minutos.es,* August 21 2006.

[186] Carlos E. Cué, "Rajoy rechaza que los inmigrantes puedan votar en las municipales," *El País,* February 14 2008.

elections with migrant voters would be contested. Notably, Rajoy's great party rival

Esperanza Aguirre, the President of the *Comunidad* (Autonomous Community) of

Madrid, voiced her support for migrant voting rights when the original IU-ICV

proposal was launched in 2006.[187]

Why did the Socialist government choose to expend political energy on

extending migrant voting rights to these new groups? The PSOE insists that their

interest in migrant voters is because they see electoral participation as part of the

process of integration. Others have speculated that this was a political move on

their part, as British and the newly arrived Romanian immigrant populations – i.e.

EU citizens who were allowed to participate in municipal elections - were more

likely to vote for the PP due to their social conservatism (Zapata-Barrero and

Zaragoza 2009). However there was no way to know how Latin Americans would

actually vote before the elections, and some members of the PSOE worried that

after making a huge effort to grant migrant voting rights, socially conservative and

religious Latin American immigrants would then turn around and vote for the

right. These sentiments echoed those of left-wing parties in Ireland: although they

(like the IU) were extremely supportive of immigrant residency and citizenship

rights, and they also supported anti-racism efforts, some Irish party officials were

very worried about the religiosity of the immigrant population and the potential

effect on social policy should conservative migrants begin voting en masse.

Therefore, immigrant mobilization, especially after a recent change in the

---

[187] This was likely no accident: in 2006, immigrants were 17% of the population of the Comunidad de Madrid, compared to 9.4% of the overall population in Spain.

population can be seen a relatively high risk, potentially low reward endeavor for local parties, as they have little information at that point about immigrant voter behavior. And in cases like Ireland and Spain, the stakes are even higher if the historical tensions between religious groups and the secular left are still politically salient. Therefore, it is difficult to attribute the behavior of the PSOE solely to the attempt to seek political advantage vis-à-vis the PP, because at that time the PSOE had no information on how new immigrant voters would behave.

After several months of negotiating, the PSOE was able to sign agreements with Bolivia, Chile, Colombia, Ecuador, Norway, New Zealand, Paraguay and Peru. The PSOE also wanted agreements with Argentina and Uruguay, but there were concerns that voting rights in these countries were not truly reciprocal: Uruguay requires fifteen years of residency before non-citizens can vote, and Argentina does not have universal non-citizen voting laws; instead, these rights are decided at the regional level. The new agreements allowed for citizens of states with the newly signed reciprocal agreements to vote in municipal elections if they had five years of residency in Spain and were on their municipal Padrón.[188] With the issue of migrant voter eligibility set, the parties set out in order to recruit immigrant voters and candidates.

The 2011 Local Elections

With the rules established, and over 68,000 city councilor positions up for grabs, parties began recruiting both candidates and voters. Under Spanish

---

[188] Citizens of the EU do not have this waiting period.

electoral rules, voters had to register for the May 22nd elections by January 15th.

This split party efforts into two phases: voter registration efforts and then the

electoral campaign.

The PSOE distributed a series of pamphlets featuring close-ups of the faces of

immigrant voters. Inside, they laid out their rationale for why immigrants should

vote:

> Register yourself in order to fight against racism and xenophobia!
>
> Spain is also your country. Today you have the same obligations and rights. You
> are able to vote. That is why you have to register in the electoral census and this
> way to combat those who offer racism and xenophobia in order to try to win elections
>
> You have to be inscribed in the census to vote![189]

According to party press releases, it registered over 50,000 new immigrant voters

for the 2011 cycle.

Unlike the PSOE, the PP was far less visible in terms of migrant voter

registration. However, once voter registration was complete, the PP kicked off its

election campaign with an April 2011 press conference in Madrid introducing many

of its immigrant candidates. The party simultaneously launched a video where an

array of candidates from different countries introduced themselves and talked about

why they joined the PP.[190] In its press release announcing the event, the PP noted

that it "advocates a stable and orderly policy of immigration, whose basic principle

have to be legality, migration that accesses our country through legal channels and

with legal permission, an immigration related to employment, and maintaining

---

[189] See Illustration 6.1 for an example of a voter registration pamphlet.

[190] El PP presume candidatos inmigrantes," *El Mundo*, April 29 2011, video and article available online at:
http://www.elmundo.es/elmundo/2011/04/28/espana/1304008184.html.

control of flows as a competency of the state".[191] Yet despite this *mano dura* ('firm hand') rhetoric, the press release goes on to call for a circular system of migration whereby immigrants can move to and from Spain depending on economic conditions without losing their residency and work permits – a huge issue for migrant workers during the economic crisis. Therefore, the press release summed up the political position of the Populares towards immigration: it needs to be legal, orderly, and controlled by the state, but it must also serve the needs of the economy – which requires that surplus migrant labor can seamlessly move in and out of the country without too much bother once they have legal status.

In comparing the two major parties, whatever 'European Advantage' the PP allegedly seemed to hold over the PSOE before the elections did not show up in the candidate pool. Of the 430 immigrant candidates for the PP, 137 were British, 69 were Romanian, and 42 were German – collectively, that means that approximately 57% of the PP immigrant candidate pool consisted of EU citizens who had a right both to run and vote under EU, not just Spanish law.[192] However, according to Pedro Zerolo, the PSOE's director of social mobilization for the Electoral Committee, 55% of their 586 candidates were European as well.[193]

---

[191] "Rajoy presentará el próximo jueves a diez candidatos inmigrantes del PP par alas municipals", *press release* April 24 2011.
[192] This is not to say that British and German support for the PP is universal – in 2007, several British media outlets noted the rise of small political parties dominated by British and German expats in coastal areas where there was a great deal of frustration with local development run rampant and corruption (Wood 2007)
[193] PSOE, "Zerolo: El PSOE es el partido que más candidatos de origen extranjero presenta," 11 May 2011 (Accessed online August 2013).

Although the figures for immigrant candidates seemed quite low, the figures for immigrant registration were much lower than expected. *El Mundo* reported that only 45,554 of more than 350,000 potential voters from countries with reciprocal agreements had registered to vote, a participation rate of 13%. By comparison 40.9% of eligible Europeans registered by January 28th (the extension deadline). The low figures among 'treaty voters' were attributed to a number of factors, including excess bureaucracy, modest voter registration campaigns, and a lack of planning. Therefore, given both the relative novelty of migrant voting beyond the British and German expat communities, and the low number of registered immigrant voters, it is not surprising that there were not huge numbers of immigrant candidates. The actions of the PP and PSOE should not be dismissed, however: given that the Spanish economy in 2011 was in free fall, and unemployment was at 21%, it is surprising, especially considering the regularity with which European political parties make political hay out of demonizing immigrants during economic downturns, that they so publicly supported migrant candidates.

Interestingly, despite their support for migrant voting rights, Spain's smaller parties were not as actively involved in migrant voter registration. This was especially true in the Basque Country where there was a much bigger issue looming: the inclusion of the newly formed abertzale political party Bildu in the 2011 elections. Although the PNV has dominated Basque politics since democratization, parties affiliated with the *izquierda abertzale* have consistently

garnered around 20% of the overall vote, with higher concentrations in Gipuzcoa.[194] However, these parties were not just linked to the abertzales, but to ETA, and subsequently have been banned by the Spanish judiciary for being unconstitutional. When the Constitutional Court initially ruled that they could not participate in the elections, the Court reversed its decision on the first day of the campaign, and despite this late start, Bildu went on to win over a quarter of the open seats.

Bildu was not the only new party on the scene. The Basque branch of the group SOS Racismo, an anti-racism organization that is active across Spain and France, launched their own party, *Origi Etorri* with the a central platform of extending universal voting rights to all immigrants. Although they did not garner electoral support, they did make their point: the Basque Country has a disproportionately high percentage of African immigrants who, under current law, have little hope of citizenship and no hope of local voting rights.

C. Capacity-building and Incorporation

Beyond citizenship and electoral issues, however, native Spanish actors were also involved in capacity-building initiatives, both through direct financing of and direct partnerships with migrant organizations.

State agencies and capacity-building

Here, the government has played a central role in establishing deliberative bodies involving both natives and immigrants, and in financially subsidizing

---

[194] Data on election outcomes comes from the INE.

migrant-led and migrant-serving organizations. The 2007 *Strategic Plan:*

Citizenship and Immigration, developed by the office of the Minister of Labor and

Social Affairs, clearly lays out the government's position on both the goals of

immigration policy and the obligations of the state:

> The central objective of the Strategic Plan is to contribute to the construction of a just, inclusive, and cohesive society, in which the coexistence of all develops common norms and values while respecting the diversity of individuals and social groups (185).

The plan also specifically references Article 9.2 of the Spanish constitution which

states "It is the responsibility of the public authorities to promote conditions

ensuring that freedom and equality of individuals and of the groups to which they

belong are real and effective, to remove the obstacles preventing or hindering their

full enjoyment, and to facilitate the participation of all citizens in political,

economic, cultural and social life". Notably, the constitution does not specify *which*

public authorities should promote these conditions, it just offers that they *should.*

Interestingly, although the constitution refers to citizens, the PSOE government

chose to extend the constitutional remit to immigrants as well in the 2007 plan, and

the PP echoed Article 9.2 in its 8/2000 immigration law. Given both the

constitutional directive, and the structure of the Spanish state, perhaps it should be

no surprise that we see the emergence of a variety of consultative partnerships

involving state agencies, elected officials, social services and migrant-led

organizations at every level of the Spanish government (particularly at the

comunidad and municipal levels) that have bi-partisan support.

In 1995, the PSOE government passed a decree forming the *Foro para la Integración Social Inmigrantes* (Forum for the Social Integration of Immigrants, heretofore referred to as the 'Foro'). According to its website, the main objective of the Foro is to "promote the participation and integration of immigrants in Spanish society".[195] The forum brings together a number of migrant-led and native organizations to 1) evaluate any piece of legislation that comes before the Cortes related to migration, and 2) to issue a *dictamen* (opinion) on these proposals. There are three groups with ten members in each group: 1) public administrators drawn from both government ministries and the governments of the two largest autonomous communities in terms of immigrant population (Madrid and Catalonia), 2) immigrant associations from the largest non-Western European sending states, and 3) social service organizations, including NGOs such as the Red Cross, religious organizations, and labor unions.

The Foro seemingly has broad political support. Although the Socialists were the ones who originally established it, when they tried to cut the budget in 2009, the PP released a press statement criticizing the government for failing to maintain spending that promoted integration, particularly given the economic crisis.[196] Given its bipartisan support, it therefore appears that the Foro is a clear example of the consultative approach still favored by Spanish political elites, despite the occasional strains related to civil war issues.

---

[195] Available at: http://extranjeros.empleo.gob.es/es/ForoIntegracion/2010-2013/.
[196] "El PP exige la restitución del Fondo de Integración de inmigrantes," *press release* March 24 2009.

Bridge-building incorporative activities have not only been facilitated by the creation of government deliberative bodies, but have been directly subsidized by it as well. In 2005, the PSOE government set up the Integra program. Integra is a part-forum, part-grant clearinghouse for community organizations that are either migrant-led or that target migrant communities. Using a web-based platform, immigrant or immigrant-serving organizations and municipalities, can apply for government funding for integration programs. However, they can also use the website as an information exchange: there are multiple chat rooms and forums where groups can exchange information or tactics or just ask questions. Over the years, the number of programs supported by Integra has increased significantly, from 152 in 2005 to 307 in 2010. Although their funding was reduced in 2010 due to the economic crisis, the program has remained in place, with an annual budget of just under seven million euros.

Worker Organizations and Capacity-building

Spain's trade unions have, since the early days of migration, been interested in the incorporation of immigrants. Sensing that opposing migration would be a losing battle given that the state did not have complete control over migration flows, Spanish unions decided to support more open migration policies in the hopes that this would keep migrant workers out of the black market economy where they could undercut Spanish workers (Watts 1998). Subsequently, both the CCOO and the UGT have supported worker amnesties and migration reform.

However, this assessment of the Spanish government's control over migration flows raised a second, important issue for the unions: how could these workers be channeled into labor organizations? Under the 1985 migration reforms, undocumented workers were not allowed to be union members. In response, the CCOO began to establish worker outreach centers called CITEs (Centros de Información a Trabajadores Extranjeros). These centers offer advice on the labor market, immigration, and other matters of importance to migrant workers, and today there are over 130 throughout Spain.[197] According to their website, the CCOO supports the CITEs because it seeks to improve the lives of workers "independent of their national origin, ethnicity, ideology or beliefs".[198] However, archival records show that when the CITEs were established, the CCOO had hoped that they would act as a gateway to union membership (CCOO 1998). Unfortunately for the union this did not happen as immigrant membership still lags far behind native membership in the union: only 6% of immigrants versus 16% of citizens are unionized (Gorodzeisky and Richards, forthcoming). However, it speaks well of the CCOO's commitment to immigrant incorporation that, despite the failure of the CITEs to generate widespread membership, they have continued to both expand and fund this program. It also speaks to their experience: for many years, the CCOO also handled social services and offered transition assistance to Spanish migrant workers outside of the country. Unfortunately, due to the economic

---

[197] The UGT established a similar migrant outreach program through its 'Centros de Información y Asesoramiento Sociolaboral para Inmigrantes'. However, their reach has been more limited, with only 12 locations.
[198] Available online at: http://www.ccoo.es/csccoo/Areas:Migraciones:CITEs.

situation, it has resumed some of these activities, and in February 2012, it announced that the CITEs would offer assistance to Spaniards looking to work in other EU countries.[199]

Despite these outreach programs, there is still some frustration in immigrant communities over the unions' level of engagement. At a 2009 roundtable on migrant workers in Madrid, several CCOO activists and non-union affiliated migrant worker organizations stood up and berated union officials for not doing more to both organize and protect migrant domestic workers.[200] Interestingly, the anger of the native membership that is increasingly shared by immigrant workers is in a way a form of integration: two months after the showdown over domestic workers, union militants began launching counter-protests at CCOO and UGT-sponsored marches and rallies in and around Madrid, with the objective of forcing the unions to take a stronger position against the government austerity program.[201] Perhaps these shared frustrations among foreign and native workers when it comes to Spain's trade union leadership is a sign that immigrants are indeed adopting the values of their Spanish counterparts and directly integrating into combative union politics.

Conclusion

---

[199] "CCOO orientará a empleados que quieran marcharse a trabajar a Europa," *El País* February 20 2012.
[200] Field notes, October 2009.
[201] I observed this phenomenon firsthand at a series of strikes and protests in Madrid between November 2009 and February 2010. They are described in detail in the following chapter.

Incorporative activity in Spain is visible across multiple areas and from multiple actors. While citizenship policy has remained relatively stable and closed off to immigrants from countries that are not former colonies of Spain, both the delayed jus soli birthright laws and the admittedly haphazard regularization campaigns have opened up some opportunities for these 'third country' immigrants to gain access to residency and citizenship. Despite the fact that a relatively low number of immigrants registered, the extension of voting rights to non-EU immigrants represented a very public effort to include immigrants in electoral politics. Finally, both Spanish government agencies and worker organizations were early adopters of consultative institutions that linked new immigrants to policymakers, and gave immigrants a change to have their grievances heard by political actors who were in a position to actually listen to and address their problems.

Why has there been so much support for incorporative activity? The first answer seems to lie in the structure of Spain's post-transition political institutions. The formal institutions, in the form of the 1978 Constitution, gave the state the mandate to support civic participation, and gave parties the means to pursue incorporation: despite its relative silence on legal citizenship, the Constitution had plenty to say about political citizenship – not surprising, given that this was the primary concern of its architects. However, the *informal* institutions that arose from the transition – political restraint and concertation – have also played a role in shaping incorporative activity: not only is there little tolerance for political

extremism (and this includes xenophobia), but the first instinct of parties and unions in the early days of migration was to set up consultative institutions, linking new immigrant communities to policymakers, bureaucrats, and political activists.

However, the second part of this equation seems to lie with the political actors themselves. The groups that both suffered under the fascist government and/or took on that government directly, at great risk, are the ones that today, sometimes surprisingly, are the most vocal advocates for migrant civic inclusion: the IU and its left-wing coalition partners and the center-right PNV. While pro-immigrant left-wing parties are neither new nor surprising, the fact that a center-right nationalist party can move in lockstep with former communists on immigration matters speaks to their common commitment to inclusion borne of their past experiences with exclusion. While left-wing Basque nationalist parties have also been vocal in their support for migrant civic inclusion, their voices have carried less weight in the policy process due to their relatively tenuous political status.[202]

The thread that binds these two mechanisms of incorporation – open institutions and interested actors - together is historical memory. Spain's post-Franco institutions are a direct result of the historical memory of the chaotic Second Republic and fratricidal violence of the Civil War (Aguilar 1998). The historical memory of repression, exclusion, and state violence shapes the outlook of Spain's indigenous minority groups, most notably the Basques, and it acts as a check on the

---

[202] This was the case until 2011. Given ETA's alleged cessation of activities, it would seem that the Spanish judiciary would not have the grounds to ban abertzale parties from electoral politics.

behavior of the two largest parties. It also inoculates the general public against the kinds of xenophobic political discourse so common across much of Western Europe today. To reference the Garcia Lorca quote at the beginning of this chapter, perhaps it is true that the dead in Spain are more alive than in any other country in the world – and this living memory of the past political excesses that led to thousands of roadside graves and shattered families scattered across the country, acts as a firewall against the kind of rising extremism in response to migration that is frighteningly common across much of the Mediterranean today.

This is not to say that the process of incorporation in Spain has been easy or perfect. The biggest challenge to incorporation is the legal exclusion of Asian and, in particular, African immigrants from straightforward access to residency and citizenship. This is an urgent issue: young men from sub-Saharan Africa are by and large politically, socially, and economically excluded from Spanish life, only entering public consciousness when spotted playing cat-and-mouse with the police while trying to sell pirated DVDs in the streets, or when photos of desperate young men washed up on the shores of the Canary Islands are splashed across the front pages of the newspapers. Given the experience of other marginalized immigrant groups in Northern Europe, the current state of affairs seems to be a recipe for disaster. To their credit, several parties and trade unions have pushed to extend both citizenship and voting rights to these groups, but as of yet, to no avail. The fact that they are even trying, however, once again speaks to Spain's difference when it

comes to immigration – especially considering how their Irish counterparts have made things increasingly difficult for African immigrants and their children.

IV.   Conclusion

Given its astronomical unemployment rate, the rapid rate of change in the level of migration, and its significant number of Muslim immigrants, Spain, perhaps more than any other European country, would seem to be a prime breeding ground for immigrant political exclusion and the rise of the kinds of far-right parties that have enjoyed recent success in Greece, Austria, Switzerland and, increasingly, Scandinavia. Yet this is not the case – quite the opposite in fact. Clearly, 'Spain is different' – but why?

As with Northern Ireland, Spain shows that incorporative activity is possible, even under difficult circumstances. Like Northern Ireland, Spain's formal political institutions are the result of compromise after decades of violence and hatred. It has native political actors who, having been past victims of discrimination, repression and violence for their minority political beliefs or status, make a particular effort to support policies that are both welcoming to and supportive of Spain's new minorities, namely immigrants. And, as in the North, the weight of history acts as both a guide for and constraint on political behavior. In other words, through their own internal experiences with trying to accommodate minority political demands and competing visions of state-society relations, Spanish political actors developed a "toolkit", namely their "repertoire...of habits, skills, and styles

from which people construct 'strategies of action'" (Swidler 1986: 273) that they were both willing and able to draw from in order to address a previously unknown social and political challenge: the political incorporation of new immigrants. This toolkit was developed independently of any experience with immigration, yet in practice, Spain as a 'new destination' looks and behaves surprisingly like an 'old destination'.

Despite these similarities there seem to be interesting and important differences between Spain, Northern Ireland, and the Irish Republic. Why, despite their origins as rural, conservative, Catholic political parties rooted in nationalism did the PNV and Fianna Fáil end up so far apart on the immigrant question – especially given the racist origins of the PNV? Why is it that the experience of emigration seems to be more present in the political approach to immigration in Spain rather than Ireland – especially given the scale of emigration in Ireland? Why does the historical memory of violence in Spain act to constrain political actors, while in Northern Ireland it seems to embolden extremists? And why, just as their leaders are embracing the incorporation of immigrants into political life, are native citizens of Spain and Northern Ireland increasingly rejecting the politics of said leaders? These questions, and other puzzles that emerge from comparing incorporative activity across these cases, will be addressed in the next and final chapter.

Table: 6.1
Immigrants as a Percentage of the Population, 1998-2012 (INE online database)

Year	Registered Migrants	Migrants as a % of the Population
1998	637,085	1.6%
1999	748,954	1.9%
2000	923,879	2.3%
2001	1,370,657	3.3%
2002	1,977,944	4.7%
2003	2,664,168	6.2%
2004	3,111,401	7.3%
2005	3,712,043	8.5%
2006	4,158,912	9.4%
2007	4,790,606	10.6%
2008	5,265,454	11.5%
2009	5,430,184	11.7%
2010	5,402,579	11.6%
2011	5,312,441	11.4%
2012	5,236,030	11.2%

Table 6.2:
Key Sending Regions for Immigrants to Spain (INE 2005; MTIN 2007)

Region of Origin	1995	2002	2006
Central and South America	18.6%	36.4%	35.1%
Western Europe	49.8%	24.8%	22.1%
Africa	19.1%	21.4%	23.6%
Rest of Europe	1.2%	10.7%	12.0%
Asia	7.7%	5.0%	6.5%
North America	3.2%	1.6%	0.6%
Rest of the World	0.4%	0.1%	0.1%
Total	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%

Table 6.3:
Top-10 Sending Countries, 2002 and 2012 (INE)

Top Sending Countries			
2002		2012	
Country	Population	Country	Population
Ecuador	390,297	Romania	798,970
Morocco	378,979	Morocco	771,632
Colombia	244,684	United Kingdom	312,959
United Kingdom	161,507	Ecuador	309,777
Romania	137,347	Colombia	245,835
Germany	130,232	China	170,839
Argentina	109,445	Bolivia	180,681
France	69,930	Germany	153,568
Italy	65,396	Bulgaria	151,475
Portugal	56,672	Portugal	121,271

Figure 6.1:
Unemployment, 1976-2013 (INE)
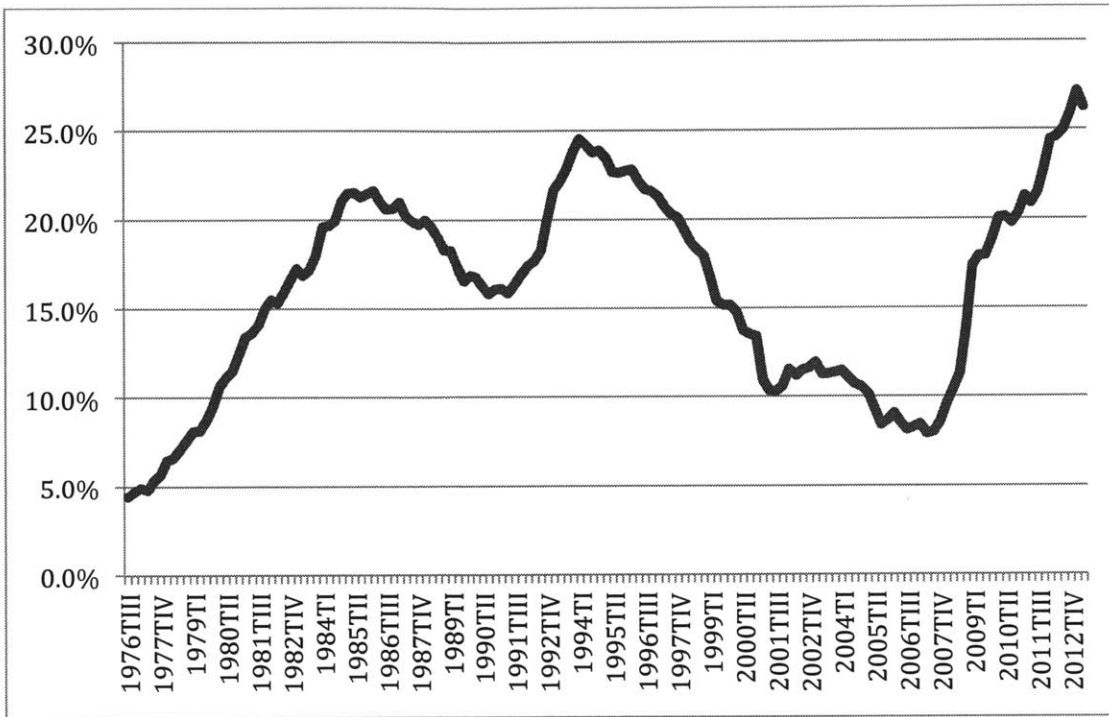
Figure 6.2:
Unemployment and Immigrants as a % of the population, 1998-2012 (INE)

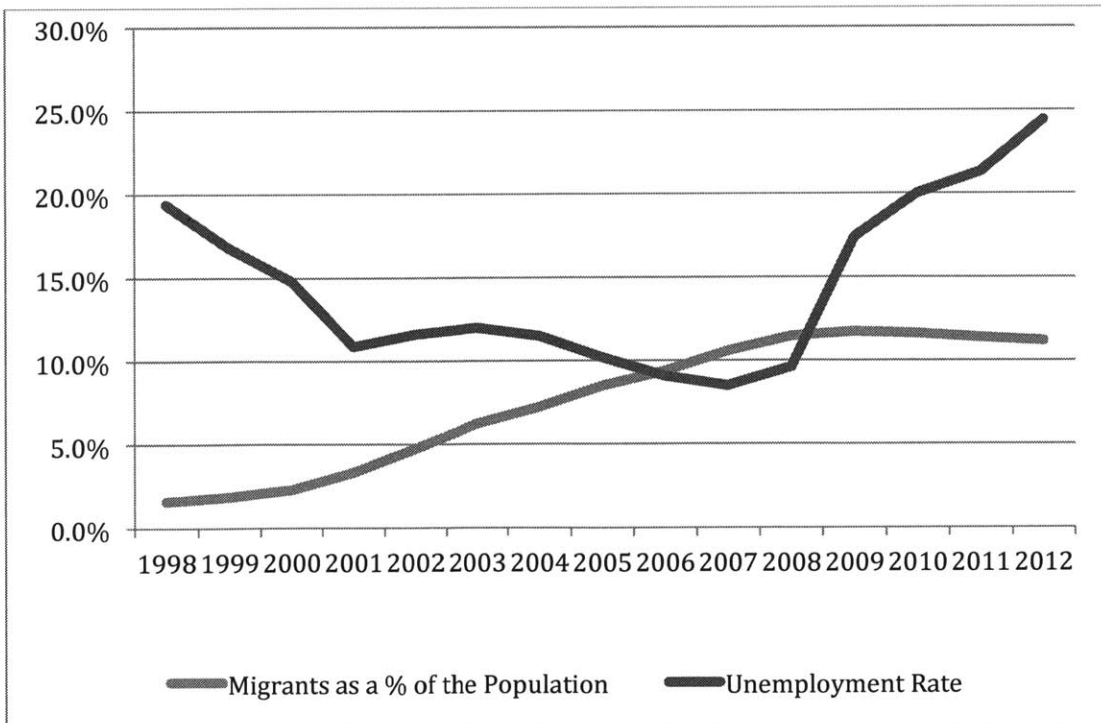Migrants as a % of the Population ▬▬ Unemployment Rate

Illustration 6.1: Election Materials

6.1a: Voter registration instructions, produced by the MTIN

Inscríbete
en el censo electoral
Elecciones municipales de 22 de mayo de 2011

¿Quiénes pueden inscribirse?

Ciudadanos nacionales residentes en España de:
Bolivia, Chile, Colombia, Ecuador, Noruega, Nueva Zelanda, Paraguay y **Perú.**

¿Cuál es el plazo de inscripción?

Del 1 de diciembre de 2010 al 15 de enero de 2011.

¿Qué requisitos se deben cumplir para inscribirse en el censo electoral?

a. Ser mayor de 18 años y no estar privado del derecho de sufragio activo.
b. Estar inscrito en el Padrón municipal de habitantes.
c. Estar en posesión de la autorización de residencia en España.
d. Haber residido legalmente en España el tiempo exigido en el correspondiente Acuerdo (cinco años en el momento de la solicitud o tres años el día de la votación para los nacionales de Noruega).
e. Cumplir los demás requisitos que estén establecidos en el correspondiente Acuerdo.

Más información:
https://sede.ine.gob.es/cere/paisesacuerdos
En tu **Ayuntamiento** (cumplimentando el impreso correspondiente).
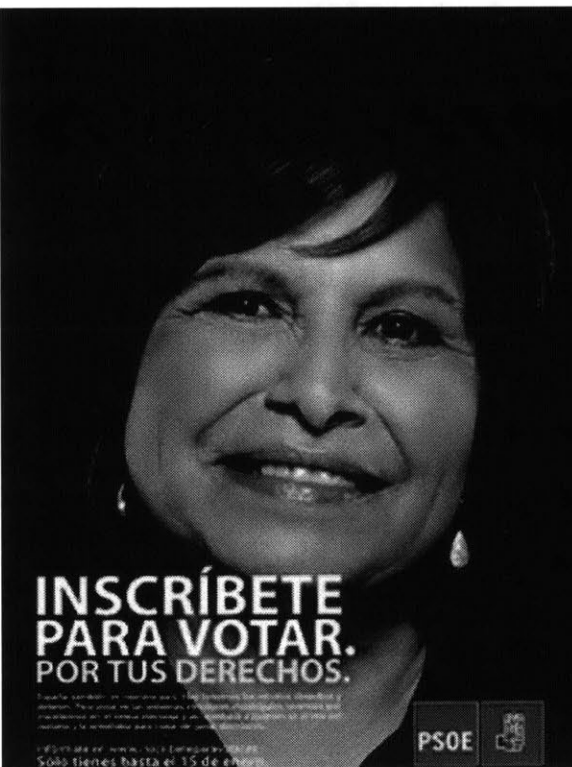
6.1b Voter registration pamphlet produced by the PSOE

Chapter 7 - Conclusion

And if a stranger sojourn with thee in your land, ye shall not vex him. But the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you, and thou shalt love him as thyself; for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt: I am the LORD your God.

- *Leviticus 19:33-34*

Over the last two decades, patterns of migration both to and within Europe have changed significantly – today, countries that were labor-exporting states are now countries of immigration. Despite the similar socioeconomic context of migration and the timing of migratory flows, there has been significant variation in the response to migration from native political actors, most notably parties: in some cases, the pathway to citizenship has been widened, migrant votes have been courted, and both governments and NGOs have established strategic and financial partnerships in order to help build the capacity of migrant communities to make their own demands directly on the state. In other cases, however, access to citizenship has been restricted, migrant voters ignored, and partnerships have been both limited and unstable. What accounts for this variation?

Using Spain, Ireland and Northern Ireland as comparative cases, and focusing on the historical political development of these new destination societies, I find that differences in how native political actors in receiving countries respond to immigrants in the present are due to how they have settled internal social conflicts over the political exclusion of native minority groups – whether ethnic, religious, or political - in the past. In Ireland, open civic institutions were not the result of broader social and political debates, but rather were largely administrative

maneuvers to manage the Republic's relationship with the United Kingdom and Northern Ireland, the British minority living in post-independence Ireland, and the free movement of people within the British Isles. Subsequently, when confronted with new immigration, the Irish government curtailed many of these open institutions. And although migrant-serving organizations and institutions were established early on, without a powerful mobilized domestic constituency deeply vested in their survival, they were vulnerable to budget cuts and retrenchment, leaving new immigrants with limited state support for access to civic life, and increasingly limited access to citizenship. Therefore, despite its (accidently) open civic institutions that were in existence when immigration began to gain steam in the 1990s, by the end of the 2000s, many Irish political actors had sharply retreated from taking on the task of incorporation.

Given Spain's astoundingly high levels of unemployment and Northern Ireland's history of bloody sectarian violence, at first glance we would not expect to see much incorporative activity at all, particularly in comparison to relatively prosperous and stable Ireland. However, it is this history of past conflict that explains present-day incorporative activity. Past conflicts over the demands by political and ethnic minorities for greater political inclusion led to violence and repression, but eventually reform. These reforms codified into law many of the demands from these previously marginalized groups, namely equal access to political life for all and protection of minority political rights. With new immigration, these open institutions inadvertently created opportunities for

immigrant newcomers to be included in political life as well. In contrast to Ireland, however, they *stayed* open because the groups that originally fought for their adoption continued not only to keep a watchful eye over their maintenance for their own self-benefit, but moved to repurpose them in order to offer protection to immigrants, who were seen as a fellow marginalized group.

Taken together, my findings suggest that societies with a legacy of social conflict may be better positioned than their more tranquil counterparts to take on the task of incorporation. Social conflicts involve disagreement over not only laws, but our understanding of those laws, and therefore can become a clash of competing social and political narratives. The resolution of these conflicts, and the codification of a new narrative into law, leaves societies with both formal (legal structures) and informal (social narratives) institutions with which they can both understand and address minority political exclusion. However, it also leaves societies with well-organized and politically savvy minority rights advocates. These groups benefit directly from the existence of open civic institutions, and are willing to take action to defend them. However, their past experiences with political marginalization means that they are also willing to defend the interests of other marginalized groups – in this case, new immigrants. Therefore, social conflict may leave new destination societies with minority-friendly institutions, advocates for marginalized minority groups, and dominant social narratives that legitimize the inclusion of 'out' groups in civic life – the very attributes that facilitate political incorporation in 'old' destinations. Without these institutional and behavioral legacies of conflict and

compromise, new destinations may struggle with immigrant political incorporation, for political elites may have no real 'toolkit', namely the "repertoire...of habits, skills, and styles from which people construct 'strategies of action'" (Swidler 1986: 273), to draw from in order to address the incorporation of newcomers into civic life.

These findings, and some of the questions they raise, also suggest opportunities for a future research agenda that turns our attention from the behavior of natives to the behavior of newcomers who face numerous obstacles to political and economic incorporation in the twenty-first century, including a growing number of restrictions on the movement of labor across international borders (particularly from developing to post-industrial economies) and rising income inequality and declining social mobility in receiving societies that may have a disproportionate effect on low-skill immigrants in the service economy.

This chapter proceeds in five sections. Section one provides an overview of my empirical findings. Section two outlines some of the theoretical and policy implications of the argument. Section three discusses some of the limitations of the study, and Section four highlights future areas of research. Section five offers a brief conclusion.

I. Empirical Findings

The main empirical findings for this project support the theoretical argument I put forth in Chapter 3. At first glance, Ireland, with its immigrant-friendly electoral laws and jus soli citizenship policy, seemed to present a best-case scenario

for incorporative activity. However, these open civic institutions were a historical legacy of British rule and partition: they were either left in place after independence, or implemented in order to deal with the remaining Anglo-Irish in the Republic or the remaining Irish Catholics in Northern Ireland. In addition, the largest minority group in Ireland in the run-up to independence, namely Protestants, was largely "drawn away" in the 1920s, with Ireland's partition into a predominately Catholic south and a predominately Protestant north. Subsequently, when confronted with new immigration in the late 1990s, and its acceleration in the 2000s, it was relatively easy for the government to roll back many of the institutional and organizational initiatives that either inadvertently benefited new immigrants (jus soli citizenship rights) or that were deliberately set up in response to migration in order to both monitor migration and to help facilitate incorporation (the NCCRI and the Office of the Minister for Integration being the two prime examples). In Ireland's case, open civic institutions were not enough to facilitate or maintain incorporative activity: without powerful and vested native actors who could protect them from budget cuts and retrenchment, and no broader historical narrative that legitimized the inclusion of immigrants in civic life, the Irish government was able to both restrict the pathway to citizenship and eliminate capacity-building organizations and institutions with surprising ease.

Northern Ireland's reputation as a hotbed of intolerance, sectarianism, and political violence make it a seemingly unlikely case for observing incorporative activity. Yet it is this very legacy of conflict that has equipped parties, unions, and

voluntary associations to reach out to new immigrants. In Northern Ireland, demands from the beleaguered Catholic minority for greater political inclusion in the 1960s presented a clear challenge to Protestant political and economic hegemony. Rising tensions led to months of escalating skirmishes between Catholics and Protestants and between Catholics and the police until in 1969 the region collapsed into three decades of bloody sectarian conflict. As the fighting dragged on, it became increasingly clear to many of the key protagonists that the existing civic institutions were neither fit for purpose nor sustainable in the long-term, and that there would need to be changes that would allow for the political inclusion and representation of the Catholic minority. There was also a need to establish a democratic means to settle broader political disputes over Northern Ireland's political status and its relationship with both the UK and the Republic of Ireland. The Good Friday Agreement of 1998, and the Northern Ireland Act (1998) institutionalized a new legal and electoral framework that made cross-community policy consultation mandatory, and that allowed for the formation and representation of multiple political parties, both sectarian and neutral, in the legislature. However, these agreements also institutionalized the dominant social narratives of the civil rights movement: the idea that all people in Northern Ireland, regardless of their religious or ethnic background, should have parity of esteem before the law. Therefore by the late 1990s, Northern Ireland had some of Europe's strongest laws protecting the rights of minorities, and its legal and

administrative codes emphasized good community relations and equal treatment of all as fundamental values of both the state and the political system.

The conflict in Northern Ireland not only affected institutions, but it also had an impact on individuals and communities. When confronted with exclusion in the 1950s and 1960s, Catholic civil rights activists adopted the 'toolkit' of the civil rights movement in the U.S., deploying a narrative of inclusive political citizenship, and using the repertoire of non-violent protest as the means to press their demands. During the peace process, community activists demanded that the state have a statutory duty to provide equal access to public services and assistance, and this demand became law through the implementation of the Northern Ireland Act (1998). Subsequently, when immigrants began arriving en masse in the 2000s, community workers were able to take the so-called "equality agenda" of the peace process that had come to dominate state-society relations between Protestants and Catholics, and apply it to new immigrants: sections of the Northern Ireland Act were cited in order to demand state-funded translation services for new arrivals, and both strategic and financial resources set aside to promote programs for 'good relations' between Protestants and Catholics were extended to migrant-serving organizations as well. Activists were also able to draw on their own experience with exclusion and discrimination to both empathize with the situation of new immigrants, and to make demands on their behalf; indeed, direct references to the civic exclusion faced by Catholics in the past are frequently used to justify the civic inclusion of new immigrants today. The behavior of these activists is consistent

with what we have seen in much of the social movement literature: people who engage in high-risk political activism are more likely than their peers to remain engaged in activist politics over time and those groups that have themselves been the victims of state repression are more sympathetic to other 'out' groups (McAdam 1990). In addition, recent research on crime and violence finds that crime victimization is a strong predictor of civic engagement (Bateson 2012); it is not surprising then that it is in some of the most deprived inner-city areas that saw some of the worst violence during the Troubles that we see some of the most engaged, committed community activists working to help bring immigrant communities into political and civic life.[203]

Taken together then, we see why and how incorporative activity varies between Ireland and Northern Ireland: Northern Ireland's inclusive institutions are jealously guarded by natives because natives benefit from them and are therefore vested in their survival – this was not the case in Ireland.[204] And native political actors in Northern Ireland, particularly in the voluntary sector, are willing and able to use the narratives they developed to voice their concerns and frustrations about their own civic exclusion in the past to justify the civic inclusion of new immigrants

---

[203] To clarify, Bateson does not make claims about the type of political activity that crime victims participate in, and in fact finds that in some parts of the world, heightened participation in civic and community affairs can include support for anti-system parties and groups, or vigilantism. That said, her analysis is completely consistent with the experience of Catholics in Northern Ireland: state repression and Loyalist paramilitary violence led to heightened political activity, but while some Catholics protested or formed political parties, others joined the IRA.

[204] It is both notable and consistent with my argument that one of the key parties in the Dáil opposed to the 2004 Citizenship referendum was republican-affiliated Sinn Féin, whose political and ideological base is still in the North, even though it operates in the South.

in the present. Therefore, despite the fact that Northern Ireland is a 'new destination', it displays many of the key characteristics that facilitate incorporative activity in 'old destinations': inclusive civic institutions, embedded and invested native political actors that see immigrants as constituents, and a historical narrative that helps to justify migrant civic inclusion.

The case of Spain underscores the main points of the argument. Spain, like Ireland, was a late developing state in Western Europe, and it too struggled with poverty, emigration, and political violence. However, like Northern Ireland, Spaniards were unable to balance the competing demands of different political groups, leading to system collapse. In Spain's case, decades of skirmishes over the political and social role of the Catholic Church, the political autonomy of the Basque Country and Catalonia, rising class struggles, and questions over the Liberal versus monarchic structure of government led to rising political extremism and a bloody civil war in the 1930s that ended with a fascist victory and nearly four decades of dictatorship. By the 1970s, it was clear that Spain's moribund political institutions were not compatible with the rising social, economic and political expectations of the population, especially at a time when state bureaucrats outside of Franco's inner circle were desperately trying to promote economic growth and build stronger ties to the rest of Europe. Weary of conflict and still scarred by the historical memory of the political extremism of the 1930s, Spanish political leaders came to a compromise whereby the new Constitution of 1978 formally guaranteed the political rights of Spain's cultural, linguistic and political minorities, groups that saw

significant state repression during the Franco dictatorship. However, the memories of past conflict also saw the emergence of strong *informal* institutions: Spanish party and union officials – the key groups that negotiated the transition to democracy - were committed to concertation and cooperation when it came to tackling tough political and social issues as nobody wanted a return to the chaos and hatred of the early twentieth century.

Therefore, when immigration pressures rose in the late 1990s and early 2000s, Spain, like Northern Ireland, had at its disposal - quite by accident - a toolkit developed in order to address the past political exclusion of natives that could be readily picked up and applied to the situation of newly arrived immigrants – the 'new' minorities. The inclusive institutions of the 1978 Constitution, the norms of restraint and consultation, and the commitment of formerly excluded native political actors to the inclusion of all groups within Spanish society meant that despite its status as a new destination, the organizations, institutions, and dominant social and political narratives of the Spanish civic sphere led to the kinds of incorporative activity we might expect to be limited to old destinations.

Ultimately, out of the three cases explored in this thesis, Ireland may have entered this latest era of European mass migration with the most immigrant-friendly legal and political institutions. But its native political actors had no toolkit with which to approach the migration issue or to consider migrant political incorporation. Northern Ireland and Spain, on the other hand, had each - with much bloodshed and heartache - developed a rather large and sophisticated

repertoire in order to address contentious issues around competing political claims and minority political inclusion. These 'toolkits' consisted of both formal and informal institutions, namely the establishment of consultative organizations and political structures, as well as closely held historical narratives and historical memories that drove the behavior of native political actors. Subsequently, with the advent of mass migration, natives in Spain and Northern Ireland were able to use the tools of the past in order to fix the challenge of the present: the incorporation of new minority groups, namely immigrants, into political and civic life.

II. Implications of the Argument

These findings have several interesting theoretical and policy implications. First, as the case of Ireland shows, the existence of inclusive institutions are a necessary but not sufficient facilitator of immigrant political incorporation: if these institutions do not have native constituencies interested and invested in their survival, then they may be subject to change or outright elimination. The 2004 Citizenship Referendum is a case in point: as immigrant families were the primary beneficiaries of the policy, they were in no real position to defend it – or even vote against it - as most were not themselves citizens. The Irish government was also quick to eliminate some of the quasi-autonomous non-governmental organizations ("quangoes") that it established in order to serve as both migration observatories and advocates for immigrant communities. Migrant's rights organizations howled in protest, but because the quangoes were solely focused on migrant-related issues

and not broader social issues, it was quite easy for the government to eliminate them during the first austerity budget in 2008 – unlike their attempts to cut medical cards or pensioner benefits, cutting immigrant quangoes did not draw the ire of a well-mobilized politically powerful native constituency. The Irish situation suggests that policymakers that are interested in establishing migrant-serving institutions or organizations would likely be better off doing so under the remit of some broader program or institution that could better fend off retrenchment. For example, in the United States, where affirmative action programs for college admissions have been scaled back considerably, legislators in Texas were able to protect minority access to the state's top-tier universities through replacing race-based affirmative action with a program that reserved a slot at one of the state's flagship universities for any student that graduated in the Top 10% of their high school class. One of the architects of the plan noted that it was only possible because supporters of affirmative action whose base of support was in poor urban areas joined forces with legislators from poor, rural areas, as researchers found that students from both of these groups were the least likely in the state to attend its flagship schools (Guinier and Torres 2003). In essence a race issue had to be turned into a class issue in order to meet the ultimate ends of greater minority representation in higher education. My findings suggest that a similar strategy may be in order for those activists and legislators invested in furthering immigrant political incorporation.

The most startling theoretical implication, however, is that societies with a history of social conflict may be better positioned to take on the task of political incorporation than their more tranquil counterparts. This seems terribly counterintuitive: in a place like Northern Ireland where seething sectarian hatred led to a thirty-year conflict that still, fifteen years after its formal conclusion, occasionally rears its head, why would we expect to see more incorporative activity than in other more peaceful countries, including its closest neighbor, Ireland?

The notion that social conflict matters for incorporative activity is one that was recently discussed in a comparison of immigrant political incorporation in the United States versus Europe. Mollenkopf and Hochschild (2010) argue that one of the reasons why the US has incorporated its new immigrants much more rapidly than its European counterparts is because of its legacy of slavery and Jim Crow. The reasons they outline are both institutional and organizational: the institutions that came out of the Civil Rights movement, namely anti-discrimination and affirmative action legislation, can help new immigrants – many of whom are non-white – confront racial prejudice and gain access to education and job training. On the organizational front, the same groups that were involved in the fight for black civil rights have turned their attention to immigrants; subsequently new arrivals get access to advocacy networks that not only have decades of experience but a deep, abiding interest in social and racial justice. However, the authors note that:

> In contrast, European countries have little experience with robust affirmative action laws, voting right laws, minority advocacy groups, litigation against job discrimination, minority business set-asides, and all the other policies and organizational strategies intended to help mitigate the consequences of centuries of racial hierarchy. These policies have not always worked in the United States, they

are not always appropriate for immigrants, and they may even have been detrimental or unfair at times – but at least they have provided a scaffolding upon which migrants and their supporters have been able to hang some policy innovations. Migrants to European countries have lacked such scaffolding and find it difficult to construct one from scratch (pg. 28).

This 'scaffolding' process as described by the authors is a perfect explanation of why and how we see incorporative activity in Spain and Northern Ireland. Northern Ireland, through its civil rights movement, conflict, and peace process, has developed a series of 'inclusive institutions' including legislative procedures that mandate cross-community consent before pushing through contentious legal changes, requirements to include representatives from both sides of the sectarian divide plus neutral actors on public consultation boards, and minority quotas for the police service – one of the most contentious institutions in Northern Ireland. Through the long years of conflict when many communities were no-go zones for the state, Northern Ireland also developed a network of community associations and advocacy groups dedicated to ending inequalities in housing and social service provision and discrimination in electoral politics. When unexpectedly confronted with new immigrants, these pre-existing advocacy networks extended their remit to newcomers, and new immigrants benefitted from the legal umbrella constructed primarily to protect Northern Ireland's native minority group, Catholics. Much of the same can be seen in Spain where constitutional clauses meant to ensure that all citizens had the capacity to participate in civic life have been extended to justify both government capacity-building partnerships with and subsidies for migrant organizations. Therefore, the Mollenkopf and Hochschild assertion that "European" countries lack experience with having to mitigate past minority exclusion may have

to be qualified. Perhaps it would be more accurate to state that in European countries with a more settled political history, there is little modern experience with this kind of thing, but along Europe's periphery where issues of native minority civic inclusion and democratic representation are still politically salient, political institutions and organizational structures and networks may be surprisingly well-suited for native political actors to take on the task of incorporation.

Is social conflict then a necessary condition for immigrant political incorporation? I do not want to go so far as to state that societies need to experience the kind of trauma suffered by the people of Northern Ireland during the Troubles or of the Basque Country during the darkest days of the Franco dictatorship in order to have the capacity to engage in incorporative activity. But social conflict, if resolved amicably, has several observable effects that facilitate incorporative activity: a commitment to pluralist, inclusive politics (and strong legal backing for this commitment) the empowerment of formally marginalized groups, and a greater social sensitivity to and awareness of political and social exclusion. As Mollenkopf and Hochschild point out, it is very difficult to build this kind of political eco-structure from scratch.

Finally, my findings suggest that minorities that are past victims of discrimination are open to being the future allies of new minority groups also facing exclusion. The implication is that we should expect to see other previously marginalized groups that were able to successfully achieve both institutional change and political recognition step forward in support of 'new' minorities today.

In light of the trans-Atlantic comparison drawn above, let us consider the case of African-Americans: having fought for equal standing before the law and full political citizenship, successfully won the implementation of new laws and institutions meant to both redress pass wrongs and monitor present and future progress, and served as the inspiration for civil rights movements of repressed people around the world, the implication of this theory is that black political leaders with ties to the civil rights movement should in fact be proponents of both immigrant's rights and the rights of other marginalized groups. Does this hold true?

First is the question of immigrant's rights, in this case, access to permanent residency and a pathway to citizenship. Given their experiences with political and economic marginalization, do black political elites engage in incorporative activities targeting the latest wave of immigrants to the U.S.? At the national level this seems to be the case. Members of the Congressional Black Congress (CBC) have been generally supportive of immigration reforms: most co-sponsored the DREAM Act (HR1751), which would regularize the status of undocumented immigrants brought to the U.S. as young children, and of creating a pathway to citizenship that does not rely on employer-sponsored visas and recognizes the importance of family reunification (Levey 2013; Waters 2011). The CBC also supported Mexican-American leaders during the debates over the Immigration Reform and Control Act (IRCA) in the 1980s (Fuchs 1993). That said, we do see differences between those members of Congress with closer ties to the civil rights era and those without: those

with closer ties are not only quite vocal advocates for migrants rights, but they

explicitly tie their past experiences with racial marginalization to the present-day

marginalization of immigrants, and in particular, Latinos. Georgia Congressman

John Lewis, the only leader of one of major civil rights organizations of the 1960s to

serve in the Congress has consistently supported immigration reform and access to

citizenship on civil rights grounds. Former Black Panther Bobby Rush (D-IL) has

also been a strong advocate of not only immigration legal reform, but for changing

the way that politicians even talk about immigration: in 2013, he filed a Resolution

(HR155) in the U.S. House of Representatives to get members of Congress to stop

using the term "illegal immigrants" in political debate. Rush referred to his

background as an advocate for racial equality to justify his position:

> America is and has always been a country of immigrants (80% of this country was
> founded by immigrants), so it is unacceptable to just now start referring to the
> status of immigrants as "illegal." I grew up in a time where people of color were
> given numerous labels and called horrific names. I have worked though my youth
> into the present to fight against all of those negative labels. Because of this, I cannot
> stand aside while other groups are marginalized by the labels placed on them by
> others, so I will join with them to prevent such atrocities from continuing.[205]

Outside of the Congress, we see a similar dynamic. Ben Jealous, the current

president of the NAACP, wrote an op-ed in the midst of the 2013 debate over

immigration reform:

> African Americans have spent much of our history fighting for equal treatment. Just
> two generations ago, our parents and our grandparents were banned from eating at
> certain restaurants, attending certain schools, and working in certain professions.
> So it is not difficult to empathize with the struggle of immigrants in our country.
> Like our ancestors who migrated from the former slave states of the Deep South,
> millions of undocumented immigrants move to the United States each year to find
> work and a decent education for their children. But when they arrive, they are

---

[205] "Congressman Bobby Rush on HR155," by Andrea Plaid, colorlines.com, July 9, 2013.

confronted with blatant discrimination and racial profiling -- with hardly any legal recourse and little public outrage...As Dr. King said, injustice anywhere is a threat to justice everywhere. African Americans have spent much of our history fighting for fair treatment and equal opportunity. We must also offer support to our immigrant brothers and sisters. If we want to escape the sins of our past, we must ensure there are no second class families today.[206]

While so-called 'black-brown coalitions' have not been frictionless, particularly at the local level, African-American political elites at the national level, and particularly those with the most direct ties to the civil rights struggles of the 1960s, have been broadly supportive of opening a pathway to citizenship for immigrants - including undocumented immigrants - and this is consistent with what we would expect, given the importance of both the civil rights narrative and experience to this generation of political leadership.

More recently, another minority group in the US has stood up to fight for a different set of civil rights: the LGBT community. Marriage equality has been a major political issue in the U.S. for the last several years, and the political battles in California and the 2013 Supreme Court decision have put gay marriage rights on the national political agenda. While gay civil rights are not covered by the same set of race-based anti-discrimination legislation that can be extended to post-1964 immigrants, my theory implies that black political elites should, by virtue of their past experiences with exclusion, be supportive of LGBT rights. However, public opinion data shows that blacks are generally less supportive of gay marriage rights than whites (Brumbaugh et al 2008; Abrajano 2010). Where do black political elites fall?

---

[206] "No Second-Class Families," *Huffington Post: Black Voices*, May 10, 2013.

While support for marriage equality has not been universal, black political leadership with the strongest ties to the civil rights movement have been the most opposed to restrictions on gay marriage. The Urban League response was mixed, with some of the larger branches (such as Chicago) jumping on board, while others reserved comment. The National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) came out in support of marriage equality, despite some reservations from the clergy on its board. However, what does stand out in the debate is how those with the most direct ties to the civil rights activism of the 1960s have been some of the earliest and most vocal proponents of gay marriage rights. Julian Bond, the former chairman of the NAACP, linked his civil rights experience to the marriage equality debate today:

> Well, I think you could not be in the civil rights movement without having an appreciation for everybody's rights. That these rights are not divisible – not something men have and women don't and so on…You don't have to be gay or lesbian to say, "These people need some kind of help. They are involved in trying to get rights for themselves, and I ought to be supportive of that. Because they were supportive of me'".[207]

Like Bond, Congressman John Lewis (D-GA) was an early opponent of gay marriage restrictions. In 1996, during Congressional debates on the Defense of Marriage Act (DOMA), which (among other issues) banned federal recognition of same-sex couples, Representative Lewis voiced his opposition on the floor of the House:

---

[207] "Roe at 40 Podcast Series: Interview with Julian Bond," interview with Heidi Williamson, Center for American Progress, February 22, 2013.

Let me say to the gentleman that when I was growing up in the south during the 1940s and the 1950s, the great majority of the people in that region believed that black people should not be able to enter places of public accommodation, and they felt that black people should not be able to register to vote, and many people felt that was right but that was wrong. I think as politicians, as elected officials, we should not only follow but we must lead, lead our districts, not put our fingers into the wind to see which way the air is blowing but be leaders...

I will not turn my back on another American. I will not oppress my fellow human being. I have fought too hard and too long against discrimination based on race and color not to stand up against discrimination based on sexual orientation.

Mr. Chairman, I have know racism. I have known bigotry. This bill stinks of the same fear, hatred and intolerance. It should not be called the Defense of Marriage Act. It should be called the defense of mean-spirited bigots act.

I urge my colleagues to oppose this bill, to have the courage to do what is right. This bill appeals to our worst fears and emotions. It encourages hatred of our fellow Americans for political advantage. Every word, every purpose, every message is wrong. It is not the right thing to do, to divide Americans.[208]

Representative Lewis's comments were consistent with civil rights-era rhetoric, which made demands for civil rights based on constitutional principles. However, they were also consistent with what we might expect given his activist background: Lewis was a founding member of the Student Nonviolence Coordinating Committee (SNCC), and famously suffered skull fractures after being beaten by the Birmingham police when trying to cross the Pettus Bridge in Selma Alabama in 1965. His comments were not, given all of the public opinion data on attitudes towards gay marriage, what we would expect from an elderly, religious black man from the Deep South. In Lewis's case, his past experience with the civil rights movement clearly influenced his views on an issue that he would not otherwise be expected to take a liberal position on.

---

[208] Cong. Rec. H7444 (1996).

III. Limitations of the study

This dissertation offers a theory of incorporative activity for new destinations, places where we would expect to see limited, at best, attempts to bring new immigrants into civic life. However, this study does have three key limitations. First, the focus is on political elites, not mass publics. For any study that focuses on elite behavior, there is always a question as to how representative their views are – not just for parties, but in particular, community organizations, which do not have electoral figures to show as evidence of having a mandate from the population they claim to represent. As the Lewis case, and the case of Sinn Féin show, political elites may take positions on contentious issues that are out ahead of their constituents; Congressman Lewis's assertion that political leaders ought to "lead our districts, not put our fingers into the wind" is admirable, but it does raise questions about the nature of representation. Much of the frustration around immigration in Europe, particularly in working-class communities, is that there is a growing sense that politicians are disconnected from their constituents, as politicians do not have to deal with overcrowded housing, schools that struggle with a large influx of children who do not speak the language, and competition for increasingly scarce jobs and stingy public benefits (Fetzer 2000; Swank and Betts 2003). This frustration is in part responsible for the rising popularity of far-right parties that address the fears of white, working-class communities directly and promise to both end immigration and restore the lost sense of economic stability (Ford and Goodwin 2010). Therefore, a focus on elites may create a falsely positive

view of the political situation, for if there is too large of a gap between the beliefs of elites and the beliefs of their constituents, this may create opportunities for far-right parties to not only get into government, but pull other parties further to the right (Meguid 2005;). While far-right parties have not gained traction in either Spain or Northern Ireland, and the fact that the far-right in Spain has not been able to capitalize on an unemployment rate that tops 20% overall and close to 50% for young people is promising, the fact that this thesis is primarily focused on elite behavior is something to be mindful of, especially if one tries to extend the argument to other cases, or make predictions about future incorporative activity.

Second, the bulk of this analysis focuses on the political behavior of elites at the national level. Given that laws regarding citizenship and electoral rights are made at the national, rather than the local level, drawing comparisons at this level is logical. However, at the local level, where fights over scarce public resources (schools, housing, and health care, in particular) may be more immediate, these same dynamics of inclusiveness and solidarity may not hold: for example, while Bobby Rush may take a very liberal view of immigration in the Congress, in his home district in Chicago, there has been rising conflict between black and Latino communities over control of the Board of Education and other key local bureaucracies, as well as conflict over the reallocation of resources from undersubscribed schools in black neighborhoods to overcrowded schools in Latino neighborhoods. While most black leaders on the south and west sides of Chicago are not openly hostile to immigration – many are themselves the sons and

daughters of labor migrants from Mississippi – as the city continues to slash its budget, conflicts over increasingly scarce public resources are likely to continue, and given Chicago's high levels of residential segregation, these are likely to carry racial and ethnic overtones.[209]

Finally, there is the issue of external validity: can this argument be extended to other societies? While this project focuses on late developing European states, it is not clear that we can extend this argument to countries that are still struggling with the process of social and economic development. If material want is extraordinarily high, accepting an influx of newcomers may be too much political and economic stress for a relatively fragile system, even for societies that have a strong legacy of mass movements for minority representation. One example of this would be South Africa: the image of the "Rainbow Nation" has in recent years been marred by terrible violence targeting immigrants from neighboring Zimbabwe and Mozambique: in 2008, anti-immigrant riots swept the country, displacing thousands and leaving over sixty people dead. Although many ANC officials and public figures tied to the anti-apartheid movement, including Archbishop Desmond Tutu, voiced their condemnation of the 2008 attacks, one observer noted, "Although state institutions have never condoned violence against migrants and have regularly condemned it, they have provided an environment wherein such xenophobic violence has effectively been legitimized by the state" (Neocosmos 2008). The same

---

[209] For an ethnic map of the Chicago area, see Paul John Higgins' map available on the Chicago Reader website: http://www.chicagoreader.com/chicago/ImageArchives?oid=3223749&by=1231787 [accessed 30 August 2013].

report went on to note that a key source of anti-immigrant activity was within the police force, which regularly shook down migrant street vendors and stood aside and watched when civilians attacked migrant businesses and households – a clear sign of weak state capacity to maintain civil order. While there are voices in South African society that explicitly point to both the legacy of apartheid, and to Zimbabwe and Mozambique's histories as places of refuge for South African activists as reason enough to support and welcome immigrants – for example, the Centre for Human Rights at the University of Pretoria called out President Jacob Zuma for not being more vocal about anti-immigrant violence, given that he, like many, fled to neighboring countries as an anti-apartheid activist[210] - in South Africa's case, and in the cases of other countries struggling with political modernization, there may be neither the economic leeway nor the state capacity to maintain social solidarity – or political order, for that matter – when confronted with new immigration.

IV. Future areas of research

In her study of peasant politics in rural France, Suzanne Berger observed, "The modern European state has lived upon a reservoir of soldiers and electors provided by the peasantry, but peasants have remained the object of politics and not its master" (1972, pg. 1). Much the same could be said of Europe's immigrants: they make up a significant percentage of the population in most European countries, but

---

[210] "SA desensitized to Xenophobia," *Sowetan* June 7 2013, available online at: http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2013/06/07/sa-desensitised-to-xenophobia.

still remain largely an object of politics. This is particularly true where native

actors have tried to make political lemonade out of the sour economic conditions

plaguing many post-industrial Western European countries. Laws regulating the

religious expression of Muslim immigrants and the status of immigrant workers are

imposed upon immigrant populations – many well into the second and third

generations – with little recognition of or input from the very communities affected

by these decisions. Therefore, the clearest area for future research is to shift the

focus from native political actors to immigrant communities, in order to better

understand how immigrants themselves choose to become engaged in – or sit out of

– civic life in their newly adopted countries. To what extent are immigrants – *can*

immigrants? - in new destinations demand their seat at the table of power? To

what extent are there differences in immigrant community mobilization along

ethnic lines? And how – if at all – does the process of incorporation differ between

old and new destinations?[211]

My preliminary takeaway from interviews conducted with both immigrant

and community activists during the course of my fieldwork is that immigrants in

Europe's new destinations do have a rising interest in using politics to better their

condition. In Ireland, the most socially and economically marginalized group of

immigrants - namely sub-Saharan Africans – is also the most vested and outwardly

interested in politics, a phenomenon so pronounced that other migrant community

activists remarked upon it frequently in interviews. Ironically, the situation of

---

[211] For example, Polish immigrants arrived simultaneously in Ireland (new destination) and the UK (old destination) after 2004. How have their experiences differed?

Africans in Ireland in the 21ˢᵗ century is somewhat analogous to the situation of the Irish in America in the 19ᵗʰ century: largely locked out of skilled work and marginalized as an inferior race, the Irish in America used political mobilization to claw their way up the socio-economic ladder.[212] For African immigrants in Ireland, many of whom spent long years prohibited from taking gainful employment while waiting for their asylum applications to be processed, electoral politics presents an opportunity for a crack at both politically controlled resources and social acceptance.

However, it also seemed that many immigrants are still straddling two worlds, politically. In Ireland, more Poles went to the Polish consulate in 2007 to cast their ballots in the Polish national elections than went to the polls in 2009 to cast their ballots in the Irish local elections. In Madrid, colorful billboards appeared in Metro stations in the fall of 2009 exhorting Bolivians living in Spain to register to vote in the Bolivian national elections. The tagline was "Vota con tu gente", which translates as "Vote with your people" – a clear signal where the Bolivian government saw the political obligations of its citizens living abroad. Similar billboards appears in 2011 in time for the Peruvian national elections – yet both the Peruvian and Bolivian governments signed bilateral agreements with the Spanish government that would allow their citizens to vote in Spanish local elections. These dynamics raise tantalizing questions for future research: to what extent do governments in immigrant-sending states see immigrants as valued constituents? How do parties see immigrant ex-pat communities – do they campaign abroad as

---

[212] In the late 19ᵗʰ and early 20ᵗʰ century, Irish immigrants, most notably in Thomas Nast cartoons in the U.S. and *Punch Magazine* cartoons in the UK, were depicted as ape-like, violent, or ignorant.

well as at home? And what is the position of sending states towards immigrant engagement in the politics of their new countries? The "Vota con tu gente" appeal of the Bolivian government seems at odds with their agreements to open up non-citizen voting rights for Bolivians living in Spain: how do they balance these competing – or complementary – political agendas and memberships?

Second, the caveat that this project is fundamentally concerned with dynamics at the national level sparks the question: what about the dynamics of incorporative activity at the local level? How are native political actors adjusting? To some extent, local dynamics are touched upon in the discussion of local elections and of capacity-building efforts, particularly in the Northern Ireland case. However, a shift to the local is also a potentially fruitful line of research because of the wider array of local actors that can be *potential* partners in the incorporative process: churches, local school boards, and block associations, to name a few. For example, in my fieldwork, I noted that at the local level, church membership seemed to play a role in how immigrants were anchored within local communities. Across much of Europe, church attendance has declined over the last several decades, and this is particularly true for the Roman Catholic Church (RCC), which is struggling to manage many half-empty buildings. For the church, immigration presents an opportunity to bring old parishes back to life again, and for immigrants, the availability of church facilities, and the openness of the church leadership to newcomers, has meant that new arrivals have a ready-made social network – a privilege not necessarily afforded to non-Catholic immigrants who may struggle to

find or establish places of worship. What remains to be seen, however, is if that social network can become *political* – while Catholic bishops are generally very vocal about migrant rights, it remains to be seen if immigrant church networks can be transformed into a mobilization network in the same way that black churches in the U.S. have come to play an important role in black political mobilization.

Finally, another interesting question that emerged during the course of this project is one that may be more relevant beyond Western Europe: to paraphrase an earlier quote, how are immigrants supposed to integrate into a disintegrated society? The case of Northern Ireland (and to a lesser extent, the Basque Country) presents an interesting theoretical and political challenge to the idea that political incorporation is both desirable and necessary, for in a country where restive regions or populations demand independence or are openly hostile to the state one must ask: incorporation into *what*? The example of the West Against Racism Network (WARN) in republican West Belfast is instructive. Their public statements against racism, their use of public art to take a stance against racism and xenophobia, and their production of a "Welcome Packet" for new immigrant residents would certainly be considered incorporative activity. WARN's interest in immigrant political incorporation seems rational, given republican West Belfast's history as a site of anti-Catholic violence and a hotbed of both political organizing and IRA volunteer recruitment during the Troubles. Also, the dominance of historical narratives that link the plight and aspirations of Northern Ireland's Catholics to other marginalized political and ethnic minorities (the Basques and Catalans of Spain,

African-Americans, and Palestinians) and that are reinforced by the use of murals and public art along the Falls Road, which cuts through the heard of republican West Belfast, serve to legitimize the practice of migrant outreach on the part of native local organizations. Therefore, on all counts the behavior of WARN is consistent with my theory of incorporative activity, and presumably this type of outreach is exactly what politicians who are deathly afraid of second-generation political and social alienation among immigrants want to see from native communities.

The problem, of course, is that Northern Ireland is not a normal society. WARN's welcome packet, which asked new residents not to call the police into the area if they had a problem, was entirely consisted with militant republicanism, but was anathema to Unionists and a cause of despair for everyone else. The oppositional position that WARN takes towards the state is entirely consistent with hardline republican values, but it is not clear that hardline republican values are consistent with maintaining the peace in Northern Ireland. Therefore, the British and Irish governments (like the Spanish government with the Basques, and the Canadian government with the Quebecois) are confronted with a conundrum: they want to see immigrant political incorporation in the present in order to prevent migrant antipathy towards the state in the future, but there is a real likelihood that some immigrants will incorporate into political movements that are, by their very nature, hostile toward the state. In this sense then, we can see interesting parallels with the debate around "segmented assimilation": most governments express an

interest in immigrant assimilation, but some immigrants may assimilate into oppositional, low-achieving subcultures that reject dominant social values, rather than assimilating and adopting mainstream values (Portes and Zhou 1993; Portes and Rumbaut 2001). While the downward/segmented assimilation debate is highly contested (see Kasinitz, Mollenkopf and Waters 2010; Waldinger and Feliciano 2004), the issues raised in this debate serve as a warning to governments professing the desirability of immigrant political incorporation: be careful what you wish for.

To date, immigrants have not been deeply involved in hardline republican or loyalist politics in Northern Ireland, or in abertzale politics in the Basque Country, but that is not to say that it cannot or will not happen, particularly with the second generation. In Belfast, two of the more notorious paramilitary commanders of the late 1990s/early 2000s were the Shoukri Brothers, sons of an Irish mother and an Egyptian father who were so thoroughly integrated into Loyalist politics that they were willing to attempt to murder Catholics and plot against the state in order to defend what they saw as 'their' culture. On the other side of the sectarian divide, Tim Brannigan, the child of an African immigrant father and an Irish Catholic mother, grew up along the Falls Road during the worst of the Troubles and identified strongly with the republican movement: in the 1990s, he was sent to prison for allowing local IRA gunrunners to use the family car as a temporary weapons depot. In his autobiography, he recounts an exchange with another republican prisoner:

> One day, sitting bored in a cell a prisoner from a rural area said: "I just think it's unfortunate that a guy like you ended up in the Blocks."

"What do you mean a guy like me?" I asked.

"Well, it's not really your fight," he stated, like it was a self-evident truth.

"I grew up on the Falls Road and I've probably had more abuse from the Brits than most people on these wings. I have a fair idea of what's going on politically," I said.

"But it's not really your fight," he said. (Brannigan 2010)

The title of his book? *Where are you really from?*[213]

IV. Conclusion

The fundamental issue that concerns this thesis is the question of

imagination: when, how and why can natives of a given country re-imagine their

political community in a way that includes outsiders? As Benedict Anderson (1991)

noted, nations are essentially 'imagined communities': "It is *imagined* because the

members of even the smallest nation will never know most of their fellow members,

meet them, or even hear of them, yet in the minds of each lives the image of their

communion" (pg. 6). He also notes, however, that the nation "is imagined as *limited*

---

[213] Brannigan later clarified his position in a 2010 op-ed for the British newspaper *The Guardian*, where he wrote "I was born in Belfast and I am black. I endured a barrage of racist abuse over decades from British soldiers and the police. With a Falls Road upbringing in a republican family and a seven-year jail term spent in the H-Blocks during the 1990s, I'd have thought my bona fides as an Irishman were pretty impeccable. To this day, though, the question I hear most is: "Where are you from?" When I tell people I'm from Belfast, they invariably throw in the supplementary: "Where are you really from?" There's no way an Irish person could possibly be black is the unspoken subtext." In his view, this was what a true Irishman did: be willing to accept prison as part of the cost of establishing a united Ireland. This provoked no small amount of consternation in the comment thread of the article, with one reader drily noting, "Interesting argument that getting a seven year-stretch proves your bona fides as an Irishman". See "Ethnic minorities make easy scapegoats in Belfast," *Guardian*, June 24 2010, online edition available at: http://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2010/jun/24/ethnic-minorities-easy-scapegoats-belfast. (accessed October 2011).

because even the largest of them, encompassing perhaps a billion living human beings, has finite, if elastic, boundaries, beyond which lie other nations" (pg. 7). The question that motivates this thesis then is: where exactly are those boundaries, and why do native actors sometimes try to shift them?

It is easy to be pessimistic when considering the elasticity of the nation. The weight of history seems to limit the imagination of modern nation-states: modern citizenship policies are described as the legal manifestation of deep-rooted notions of nationhood and identity, and these are considered to be 'sticky' over time (Brubaker 1992). Some would even question the capacity of humankind to fully embrace all existing members of a given community, not just newcomers; the theologian Reinhold Niebuhr, whose work had an enormous influence on Martin Luther King Jr., wrote that, "The social impulses, with which men are endowed by nature are not powerful enough, even when they are extended by a growing intelligence, to apply with equal force toward all members of a large community" (1932, 13). Yet despite this pessimism, we do see time and time again that both the internal and external boundaries of the imagined community can be stretched: while they were often sent off to war to defend the physical boundaries of the nation, the poor and working classes did not have full and equal political citizenship in many Western democracies until the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries; women were similarly excluded. If we look to the United States as an example, blacks only attained full political citizenship in the 1960s, a century after the end of slavery, yet in 2008, a black man was elected President.

The ties that bind the nation are not limited to blood or the annals of history: shared civic norms, language, and even modern experiences of conflict and repression can both awaken old and create new ideals of citizenship and norms of belonging. This process can be disruptive, or even violent, and may be painful for all involved, but ultimately, the process of re-imagining the political community to include new groups can create the space – and indeed, the inspiration - for expanding the boundaries of that community in the future.

Appendix A: Methods

For this project, I took an inductive approach. While I selected cases based on their similar socioeconomic characteristics, I did not start this project with a theory that I meant to test; rather I began with a set of observations based on my analysis of rapidly changing economic and demographic data in Western Europe, and a series of expectations informed by the literature on immigrant political incorporation, trade union revitalization and the broader (American) literature on political mobilization.

Between June 2009 and September 2011, I made a series of research trips to 1) Dublin, Ireland, 2) Belfast, Northern Ireland, 3) Madrid, Spain, and 4) Bilbao, Spain. The trips lasted between eight weeks to five months, and I made at least two trips to each location. For these cases I used the initial longer trips to build contact lists and to get a better sense of what was happening on the ground. Subsequent trips were used to collect additional archival data or to follow up with contacts that I'd missed on previous visits.

Research Visits

Dublin	June – July 2009
Madrid	September 2009 – February 2010
Dublin	March – May 2010
Belfast	June – July 2010
Bilbao	October – November 2010
Belfast	December 2010
Madrid	June 2011
Bilbao	July – August 2011
Belfast	August – September 2011

Interviews

I conducted 102 formal interviews overall. My strategy across cases was to approach the same set of actors: 1) party officials and activists, 2) government bureaucrats tasked with managing immigration-related issues, 3) trade union officials, and 4) both native and migrant-led NGOs. Because of the sensitivity of some of the issues discussed around immigration, and the reliance of many organizations on government funding, I have kept all interview responses anonymous.

Most interviews lasted between ninety minutes to two hours, although they were generally longer in Ireland than in Spain. Irish political organizations, and Northern Irish organizations in particular were generally far more open than their Spanish counterparts, with the exception of trade unions. In addition, nationalist organizations were more open to interviews and were easier to gain access to than non-nationalist parties and organizations.

Subject	Ireland	Northern Ireland	Spain	All
Party & Elected Officials	9	4	5	18
Government Officials	4	4	1	9
Trade Union Officials	6	5	8	19
NGOs	17	25	15	57
TOTAL	36	37	29	102

Because I chose to live in immigrant gateway communities when possible, and I regularly attended community meetings, strikes, and other protests, I conducted countless additional informal interviews during the course of my

fieldwork.[214] I talked to workers on picket lines, angry protestors outside of government offices, both native and immigrant small business owners, and other people who lived and worked in areas that had undergone enormous social and demographic change over a very short period. Many of these informal conversations were initiated by the other party: my appearance as a relatively tall, biracial female attracted attention in the communities in which I embedded myself, and I was regularly approached by strangers who were curious about my ethnic background and why I was there. This curiosity included both natives and immigrants; often immigrants were even more surprised than natives to find out that I was an American, and the question "But where are you REALLY from?" was not infrequent. All of these encounters were recorded in field notes or in a daily journal I kept during my field research.

Archival research

My conversations with informants in parties, unions, community organizations and government bureaucracies guided my document collection. In addition to collecting pamphlets and reports from organizations that I interviewed, I noted and researched the background of key legislation that they mentioned as being useful. This background research included press releases and statements from key stakeholders, media reports, and original legislative transcripts. In

---

[214] In Madrid, I lived in Lavapiés, and in Belfast I lived off of the Lower Ormeau Road in South Belfast. The immigrant population in Dublin is relatively dispersed, and in Bilbao I was unable to find short-term housing in San Francisco, the key gateway neighborhood that is somewhat similar to Lavapiés in Madrid.

addition, I used legislative records in order to determine for myself how different

parties viewed issues of migration and citizenship before legal changes and in the

middle of political debates, rather than relying on recollection after the fact. Where

possible, I used organization archives (this primarily applied to Spanish unions),

but also the legislative records of the Spanish Cortes, the Irish Oireachtas, and the

British Parliament. Finally, in Northern Ireland, I was able to use the archives of

the Linen Hall Library, which kept many original documents from the Northern

Ireland peace process, including original posters, mimeographed flyers and

pamphlets distributed in neighborhoods, and press statements.

Appendix B: Census Data and Government Statistics

Ireland

Central Statistics Office. 1926. Number of persons of each religion in Saorstat Éireann at each census year from 1861, the first year for which figures are available.

_____. 1986. Table 21A: Persons, males and females in each Province classified by country of birth.

_____. 2006.

_____. 2008. *Census 2006: Non-Irish Nationals Living in Ireland.* Dublin: Stationary Office.

_____. 2010a. "Union Membership." *Quarterly National Household Survey.* http://www.cso.ie/en/media/csoie/releasespublications/documents/labourmark et/2009/qnhsunionmembership_q22009.pdf.

_____. 2010b. "Chapter 8: Economy." *Statistical Yearbook.* Dublin: Stationary Office.

_____. 2012. *Profile 6: Migration and Diversity.* Dublin: Stationary Office.

Northern Ireland

Northern Ireland Statistical Research Agency. 2008. *Long Term International Migration Statistics for Northern Ireland (2006-7),* by Gillian Fegan and David Marshall. Occasional Paper Series no. 26. Belfast.

_____.2010. *Migration Statistics for Northern Ireland (2009).* Press release.

_____. 2010

_____. 2011.

Office for National Statistics. 2009. *Report: Demographic Trends in Northern Ireland.* Prepared for the 'Population Trends' series, no. 31, pg. 91-97.

_____.2011. *Regional characteristics of foreign-born people living in the United Kingdom,* by Alice Reid and Caroline Miller. Prepared for the 'Regional Trends' series, no. 43, pg. 3-30.

Spain

Instituto Nacional de Estadística. 2004. "Extranjeros en España," *Boletín Informativo del Instituto Nacional de Estadística.*. Madrid. Available at: http://www.ine.es/ss/Satellite?c=Page&cid=1254735116567&pagename=Prod uctosYServicios%2FPYSLayout&L=en_GB.

_____.*Encuesta Nacional de los inmigrantes: Una monografía.* Madrid. Available online at: http://www.ine.es/ss/Satellite?L=1&c=INEPublicacion_C&cid=125992495758 5&p=1254735110672&pagename=ProductosYServicios%2FPYSLayout&para m1=PYSDetalleGratuitas.

_____. 2012. "Extranjeros en la UE y en España," *Boletín Informativo del Instituto Nacional de Estadística.* Madrid. Available at: http://www.ine.es/ss/Satellite?c=Page&cid=1254735116567&pagename=Prod uctosYServicios%2FPYSLayout&L=en_GB.

_____. 2013. "Evolución de la población de España entre los Censos de 2002 – 2011"

Historical census data was also available through the INE website at: http://www.ine.es/en/inebmenu/mnu_cifraspob_en.htm.

International
OECD. 2010. "Economic, Environmental and Social Statistics." *OECD Factbook 2010.* Online database.

References

Abrajano, Marisa. 2010. "Are Blacks and Latinos Responsible for the Passage of Proposition 8? Analyzing Voter Attitudes on California's Proposal to Ban Same-Sex Marriage in 2008." *Political Research Quarterly* 63(4): 922-932.

Aguilar, Paloma. 1998. "The memory of the civil war in the transition to democracy: The peculiarity of the Basque Case." *West European Politics* 21(4) 5-25.

Alba, Richard. 2005. "Bright vs. blurred boundaries: Second-generation assimilation and exclusion in France, Germany, and the United States." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 28(1): 20-49.

Andersen, Kirsti. 2010. *New Immigrant Communities: Finding a Place in Local Politics.* Boulder: Lynne Renner.

Anderson, Benedict. (1983) 2006. *Imagined Communities.* New York: Verso.

Arango, Joaquin. 2013. *Exceptional in Europe? Spain's Experience with Immigration and Integration.* Washington DC: Migration Policy Institute.

Arango, Joaquin and Philip Martin. 2005. "Best Practices to Manage Migration: Morocco-Spain." *International Migration Review* 39(1): 258-269.

Astudillo Ruiz, Javier. 2004. "La trampa partidista de la UGT: de la relación solidaria con el PSOE a la unidad de acción syndical con CCOO". *Revista Española de Ciencia Politica* (11):73-101.

Baccaro, Lucio and Sang-Hoon Lim. 2007. "Social Pacts as Coalitions of the Weak and Moderate: Ireland, Italy and South Korea in Comparative Perspective." *European Journal of Industrial Relations* 13(1): 27-46.

Bale, Tim, Christoffer Green-Pedersen, André Krouwel, Kurt Richard Luther, and Nick Sitter. 2010. "If You Can't Beat Them, Join Them? Explaining Social Democratic Responses to the Challenge from the Populist Radical Right in Western Europe." *Political Studies* 58(3): 410-486.

Balerdi, Felix Etxeberri. 1997. "Bilingualism and biculturalism in the Basque country." *Educational Review* 49(2): 141.

Banks, Andy. 1991. "The Power and Promise of Community Unionism." *Labor Research Review* 1(18): 17-31.

Barreto, Matt A. 2007. "*Sí Se Puede!* Latino Candidates and the Mobilization of Latino Voters." *American Political Science Review* 101(3): 425-441.

Barreto, Matt A. and Francisco I. Pedraza. 2009. "The renewal and persistence of group identification in politics." *Electoral Studies* 28(4): 595-605.

Bateson, Regina. 2012. "Crime Victimization and Political Participation." *American Political Science Review* 106(3): 570-587.

Bauböck, Ranier. 2005. "Expansive Citizenship – Voting beyond Territory and Membership." *PS, Political Science & Politics* 38(4): 683-688.

Ben-Ami, Shlomo. 1991. "Basque Nationalism between Archaism and Modernity." *Journal of Contemporary History* 26(3/4): 493-521.

Berger, Suzanne. 1972. *Peasants Against Politics.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

Bloemraad, Irene. 2005. "The limits of de Tocqueville: How government facilitates organisational capacity in newcomer communities." *Journal of Ethnic and Migration Studies* 31 (5): 865-87.

_____. 2006. *Becoming a Citizen: Incorporating Immigrants and refugees in the United States and Canada.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

_____. 2011. "'Two Peas in a Pod," "Apples and Oranges," and Other Food Metaphors: Comparing Canada and the United States." *American Behavioral Scientist,* 55(9):1131-1159.

Bloomfield, Kenneth. 2007. *A Tragedy of Errors: The Government and Misgovernment of Northern Ireland.* Liverpool: Liverpool University Press.

Brady, H. E., Kay L. Schlozman, and Sidney Verba. 1999. "Prospecting for participants: Rational expectations and the recruitment of political activists." *American Political Science Review* 93(1): 153-68.

Brannigan, Tim. 2010. *Where are you really from?* Belfast: Blackstaff Press.

Brenan, Gerald. 1943. *The Spanish Labyrinth: The social and political background of the Spanish Civil War.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Brubaker, Rogers. 1992. *Citizenship and Nationhood in France and Germany.* New York: Cambridge University Press.

Brumbaugh, Stacey M., Laura A. Sanchez, Steven L. Nock, and James D. Wright. 2008. "Attitudes Toward Gay Marriage in States Undergoing Marriage Law Transformation." *Journal of Marriage and Family* 70: 345-359.

Brunell, Thomas L. 2006. "Rethinking Redistricting: How Drawing Uncompetitive Districts Eliminates Gerrymanders, Enhances Representation, and Improves Attitudes towards Congress." *PS: Political Science and Politics* (1):77-85.

Calavita, Kitty. 1998. "Immigration, Law, and Marginalization in a Global Economy: Notes from Spain." *Law & Society Review* 32(3): 529-566.

Caldwell, Christopher. 2009. *Reflections on the Revolution in Europe: Immigration, Islam and the West.* New York: First Anchor Books.

Callahan, William J. 1989. "The Spanish Parish Clergy, 1874-1930." *The Catholic Historical Review* 75(3): 405-422.

Cameron, Charles, David Epstein and Sharyn O'Halloran. 1996. "Do Majority-Minority Districts Maximize Substantive Black Representation in Congress?" *The American Political Science Review* 90(4): 794-812.

Campaign for Social Justice. 1965. *Londonderry: One Man, No Vote.* Dungannon: CSJNI.

Campbell, Andrea. 2003. *How Policies Make Citizens: Senior Political Activism and the American Welfare State.* Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Chong, Dennis and James N. Druckman. 2007. "A Theory of Framing and Opinion Formation in Competitive Elite Environments." *Journal of Communication* 57: 99-118.

Clark, Robert. 1979. *The Basques, the Franco Years and Beyond.* Reno: University of Nevada Press.

Cohen, F. S. 1997. "Proportional versus majoritarian ethnic conflict management in democracies." *Comparative Political Studies* 30 (5): 607-630.

Coogan, Tim Pat. 1966. *Ireland Since the Rising.* New York: Frederick A. Praeger Publishers.

Dahl, Robert. 1971. *Polyarchy: Participation and Opposition.* New Haven: Yale University Press.

Dahl, Robert A. (1974) 2005. *Who Governs? Democracy and power in an American City*. New Haven: Yale University Press.

Dancygier, Rafaela. 2010. *Immigration and Conflict in Europe*. New York: Cambridge University Press.

De la Cueva, Julio. 1998. "Religious Persecution, Anticlerical Tradition and Revolution: On Atrocities against the Clergy during the Spanish Civil War." *Journal of Contemporary History* 33(3): 355-369.

De la Granja, José Luis, Santiago de Pablo and Coro Rubio Pobes. 2011. *Breve Historia de Euskadi: De los Fueros a la Autonomía*. Random House: Barcelona.

De Unamuno, Miguel. (1895) 2005. *En torno al casticismo*. Madrid: Catedra.

Department for Business Innovation and Skills. 2010. *Trade Union Membership 2010*, by James Achur. National Statistics Publication. London.

Donaghey, Jimmy. 2008. "Deliberation, Employment Relations and Social Partnership in the Republic of Ireland." *Economic and Industrial Democracy* 29(1): 35-63.

Earnest, David. 2006. "Neither Citizen Nor Stranger: Why States Enfranchise Resident Aliens," *World Politics* 58: 242-75.

Equality Challenge Unit. 2010. *Anti-discrimination law in Northern Ireland*, by Fiona Cassidy. Briefing.

Encarnación, Omar. 1997. "Social Concertation in Democratic and Market Transitions: Comparative Lessons from Spain." *Comparative Political Studies*, 30(4): 387-419.

_____. 2004. "The Politics of Immigration: Why Spain is Different." *Mediterranean Studies Quarterly* 15(4): 167-185.

Erie, Steven. 1988. *Rainbow's End: Irish-Americans and the Dilemmas of Urban Machine Politics, 1840-1985*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Equality Commission of Northern Ireland. 2007. *Section 75: Keeping it Effective*. Belfast.

European University Institute (EUI). 2000. *The Celtic Tiger – An Analysis of Ireland's Economic Growth Performance*, by Antoin E. Murphy. Prepared for the EUI Working Paper series, RSC No. 2000/16.

EUDO Citizenship Observatory. 2012. *Country Report: Spain*, by Ruth Rubio Marín, Irene Sobrino, Alberto Martín Pérez, Francisco Javier Moreno Fuentes. Badia Fiesolana, Italy.

Fanning, Bryan, Fidele Mutwarasibo and Neltah Chadamoyo. 2003. *Positive Politics: participation of immigrants and ethnic minorities in the electoral process*. Dublin: Africa Solidarity Centre.

Fanning, Bryan and Fidele Mutwarasibo. 2007. "Nationals/non-nationals: immigration, citizenship and politics in the Republic of Ireland". *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 30(3):439-460.

Fanning, Bryan. 2009. *New Guests of the Irish Nation*. Dublin: Irish Academic Press.

Fetzer, J. S. 2000. *Public attitudes toward immigration in the United States, France, and Germany*. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Fine, Janice. 2006. *Worker Centers: Organizing communities at the edge of a dream*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

Fine, Janice and Daniel J. Tichenor. 2009. "A Movement Wrestling: American Labor's Enduring Struggle with Immigration, 1866-2007." *Studies in American Political Development* 23: 218-248.

Ford, Robert and Matthew J. Goodwin. 2010. "Angry White Men: Individual and Contextual Predictors of Support for the British National Party." *Political Studies* 58:1-25.

Frege, Carola M. and John Kelly. 2003. "Union Revitalization Strategies in Comparative Perspective." *European Journal of Industrial Relations* 9(1):7-24.

Ganz, Marshall. 2011. "Public Narrative, Collective Action, and Power." In *Accountability Through Public Opinion*, edited by Sina Odugbemi and Taeku Lee, 273-290. Washington DC: World Bank.

Geoghegan, Peter. 2010. *A Difficult Difference: Race, Religion and the New Northern Ireland*. Dublin: Irish Academic Press.

Glynn, William. 2012. "The story of the Great Irish Famine 1845-1852: A geographical perspective," in *Atlas of the Great Irish Famine*, edited by John Crowley, William J. Smith and Mike Murphy, 4-12. Cork: Cork University Press.

Goffman, Erving. 1974. *Frame Analysis: An essay on the organization fo experience.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

Gorodzeisky, Anastasia and Andrew Richards. forthcoming. "Trade unions and migrant workers in Western Europe." *European Journal of Industrial Relations.*

Government of Northern Ireland. 1926. *Census of Population of Northern Ireland 1926: General Report.* Belfast: H.M. Printing Office.

Griffith, Arthur. 1918. *The Resurrection of Hungary.* Dublin: Patrick Mahon.

Griffith, David. 2008. "New Midwesterners, New Southerners: Immigration Experiences in Four Rural American Settings," In *New Faces in New Places: The Changing Geography of American Immigration*, edited by Douglas S. Massey, 179-210. New York: Russell Sage Foundation.

Guinier, Lani and Gerald Torres. 2003. *The Miner's Canary: Enlisting race, resisting power, transforming democracy.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press.

Gunther, Richard, José Ramón Montero and Joan Botella. 2004. *Democracy in Modern Spain.* New Haven: Yale University Press.

Haddad, Yvonne Yazbeck and Michael J. Balz. 2006. "The October Riots in France: A Failed Immigration Policy or the Empire Strikes Back?" *International Migration* 44(2): 23-34.

Hayes, Bernadette, and Lizanne Dowds. 2006. "Social Contact, Cultural Marginality or Economic Self-Interest? Attitudes towards Immigrants in Northern Ireland." *Journal of Ethnic and Migration Studies* 32 (3):455-76.

Helmke, Gretchen and Steven Levitsky. 2004. "Informal Institutions and Comparative Politics: A Research Agenda." *Perspectives on Politics* 2(4):725-740.

Hero, Rodney. 1992. *Latinos and the US Political System: Two-tiered Pluralism.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press.

Hill, Herbert. 1996. The Problem of Race in American Labor History." *Reviews in American History*, 24(2):189-208.

Hirsi Ali, Ayaan. 2007. *Infidel.* New York: Atria.

Hooghe, Liesbet, Gary Marks and Carole J. Wilson. 2002. "Does left/right structure party positions on European integration?" *Comparative Political Studies* 35(8): 965-989.

Huntington, Samuel. 1968. *Political Order in Changing Societies.* New Haven: Yale University Press.

Jauregui, Gurutz. 1986. "National identity and political violence in the Basque country." *European Journal of Political Research* 14: 587-605.

Jones-Correa, Michael. 1998. *Between Two Nations: The Political Predicament of Latinos in New York City.* Ithaca: Cornell University Press.

_____. 2008. "Race to the top? The politics of immigrant education in suburbia," in *New Faces in New Places: The Changing Geography of American Immigration* edited by Douglas S. Massey, 308-340, New York: Russell Sage Foundation.

Joppke, Christian. 2009. *Veil: Mirror of Identity.* Malden: Polity Press.

Joyce, James. [1922] 2010. *Ulysses.* Hertfordshire: Wordsworth Classics.

Kaufman, Stuart J. 2006. "Escaping the Symbolic Politics Trap: Reconciliation Initiatives and Conflict Resolution in Ethnic Wars." *Journal of Peace Research* 43(2):201-218.

Knirck, Jason. 2006. *Imagining Ireland's Independence: The Debates Over the Anglo-Irish Treaty of 1921.* Lantham: Rowman and Littlefield.

Krings, Torben, "Organized Labour and Migration in the Global Age: A Comparative Analysis of Trade Union Responses to Migrant Labour in Austria, Germany, Ireland and the UK," [PhD, Dublin City University] 2009.

Lentin, Ronit. 2007. "Ireland: Racial state and crisis racism," *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 30(4): 610-627.

Lewis, Paul G. and S. Karthick Ramakrishnan. 2007. "Police Practices in Immigrant-Destination Cities." *Urban Affairs Review* 42(6): 874-900.

Lijphart, Arend. 1999. *Patterns of Democracy: Government Forms and Performance in Thirty-Six Countries.* New Haven: Yale University Press.

Lister, R. 1998. "Citizen in action: citizenship and community development in a Northern Ireland context." *Community Development Journal* 33 (3): 226.

Mac Éinrí, Piaras. 2012. "Contemporary trends in Irish and European (e)migration," lecture, University College Cork.

Mahoney, James. 2010. *Colonialism and Postcolonial Development: Spanish America in Comparative Perspective.* New York: Cambridge University Press.

Mahoney, James and Dietrich Rueschemeyer. 2003. "Comparative Historical Analysis: Achievements and Agendas." In *Comparative historical Analysis in the Social Sciences* edited by James Mahoney and Dietrich Rueschemeyer, 3-40. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Mahoney, James, and Kathleen A. Thelen. 2010. "A Theory of Gradual Institutional Change." In *Explaining institutional change: ambiguity, agency, and power*, edited by James Mahoney and Kathleen A. Thelen. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Maravall, José María and Julián Santamaría. 1986. "Political Change in Spain and Prospects for Democracy". In *Transitions from Authoritarian Rule: Southern Europe,* edited by Guillermo O'Donnell, Philippe C. Schmitter and Laurence Whitehead. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Marrow, Helen B. 2009. "Immigrant bureaucratic incorporation: The dual roles of professional missions and government policies." *American Sociological Review* 74 (5): 756.

_____. 2010. *New Destination Dreaming: Immigration, Race and Legal Status in the Rural American South.* . Palo Alto: Stanford University Press.

Marshall, TH. 1964. *Class, Citizenship, and Social Development.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press

Meguid, Bonnie. 2005. "Competition between Unequals: The Role of Mainstream Party Strategy in Niche Party Success." *American Political Science Review* 99(3): 347-359.

McAdam, Doug. 1990. *Freedom Summer.* New York: Oxford University Press.

McIntyre, Anthony. 2003. "Provisional Republicanism: *Internal Politics, inequities and modes of repression,*" in *Republicanism in Modern Ireland,* edited by Fearghal McGarry, 178-198. Dublin: University College Dublin Press.

McKay, Susan. 2005. *Northern Protestants: An Unsettled People.* Belfast: Blackstaff Press.

McVeigh, R. 2002. "Between reconciliation and pacification: the British state and community relations in the north of Ireland." *Community Development Journal* 37 (1): 47.

Milkman, Ruth. 2006. *L.A. Story: Immigrant Workers and the Future of the U.S. Labor Movement.* New York: Russell Sage Foundation.

Mollenkopf, John and Jennifer Hochschild. 2010. "Immigrant political incorporation: comparing success in the United States and Western Europe." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 33(1):19-38.

Moore, Barrington. 1966. *Social Origins of Dictatorship and Democracy: Lord and Peasant in the Making of the Modern World.* Boston: Beacon Press.

Nagengast, Carole and Michael Kerney. 1990. "Mixtec Ethnicity: Social Identity, Political Consciousness, and Political Activism." *Latin American Research Review* 25(2):61-91.

Neocosmos, Michael. 2008. 'The Politics of Fear and the Fear of Politics: Thinking about Xenophobia in South Africa." *Biodiversité: la haute-86.*

NCCRI. 2004. *The Citizenship Referendum: Issues, Observations and Concerns.* Advocacy Paper Series, paper #3 (June 2004).

Niebuhr, Reinhold. (1932) 2001. *Moral Man and Immoral Society: A Study in Ethics and Politics.* Louisville: Westminster John Knox Press.

O Dochartaigh, Niall. 2005. *From Civil Rights to Armalites: Derry and the Birth of the Irish Troubles.* 2nd ed. New York: Palgrave.

Okin, Susan Moller. 1999. "Is Multiculturalism Bad for Women?" In *Is Multiculturalism Bad for Women?,* edited by Susan Moller Okin, 9-24. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Orgad, Liav. 2010. "Illiberal Liberalism: Cultural Restrictions on Migration and Access to Citizenship in Europe". *The American Journal of Comparative Law.* 58:53-106.

Office of the Refugee Applications Commissioner. 2004. *Annual Report 2001.* Ireland.

Office of the Refugee Applications Commissioner. 2004. *Annual Report 2004.* Ireland.

Pantoja, Adrian D., Ricardo Ramirez and Gary M. Segura. 2001. "Citizens by Choice, Voters by Necessity: Patterns in Political Mobilization by Naturalized Latinos." *Political Research Quarterly* 54(4): 729-750.

Patterson, Molly and Kristen Renwick Monroe. 1998. "Narrative in Political Science." *Annual Review of Political Science* 1: 315-31.

Pennings, Paul and Reuven Y. Hazan. 2001. "Democratizing Candidate Selection: Causes and Consequences." *Party Politics* 7(3): 267-275.

Piven, Frances Fox and Richard A. Cloward. 1979. *Poor People's Movements; Why they Succeed, How they Fail.* New York: Vintage Books.

Poletta, Francesca and James M. Jasper. 2001. "Collective Identity and Social Movements." *Annual Review of Sociology* 27: 283-305.

Portes, Alejandro and Min Zhou. 1993. "The New Second Generation: Segmented Assimilation and Its Variants." *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science,* 530: 74-96.

Portes, Alejandro and Rubén Rumbaut. 2001. *Legacies: The Story of the Immigrant Second Generation.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Preston, Paul. 1986. *The Triumph of Democracy in Spain.* Methuen: New York.

_____. (1986) 2007. *The Spanish Civil War.* New York: Norton.

Purdie, Bob. 1990. *Politics in the Streets: The origins of the civil rights movement in Northern Ireland.* Belfast: Blackstaff Press.

Putnam, Robert. 1971. "Studying Elite Political Culture: The Case of 'Ideology'." *The American Political Science Review* 65(3):651-681.

_____. 2007. "E Pluribus Unum"

Richards, Michael. 1998. *A Time of Silence: Civil War and the Culture of Represion in Franco's Spain.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Roche, William K. 2007. "Social Pertnership in Ireland and New Social Pacts." *Industrial Relations* 46(3): 395-425.

Rosenstone, Steven J. and John Mark Hansen. 1993. *Mobilization, Participation and Democracy in America.* Longman Classics in Political Science.

Sabater, Albert and Andreu Domingo. 2010. "A New Immigration Regularization Policy: The Settlement Program in Spain." *International Migration Review* 46(1): 191-220.

Schattschneider, E. E. 1960. *The Semisovereign People: A Realist's View of Democracy in America.* Hinsdale: Dryden Press.

Special EU Programmes Body. 2007. "SEUPB – What is the PEACE III Programme?" SEUPB website [accessed September 17, 2012).

Sewell Jr, William H. 1985. "Ideologies and Social Revolutions: Reflections on the French Case." *The Journal of Modern History* 57(1):57-85.

Shafir, Gershon. 1995. *Immigrants and Nationalists: Ethnic Conflict and Accommodation in Catalonia.* Albany: State University of New York Press.

Shirlow, Peter and Kierab Murtagh. 2004. "Capacity-building, Representation and Intracommunity Conflict." *Urban Studies* 41(1):57-70.

Skocpol, Theda. 1993. "America's First Social Security System: The Expansion of Benefits for Civil War Veterans," *Political Science Quarterly* 108(1): 85-116.

Small, Mario. 2009. "'How many cases do I need?' On science and the logic fo case selection in field-based research." *Ethnography* 10(1): 5-38.

Swank Duane and Hans-Georg Betz. 2003. "Globalization, the welfare state and right-wing populism in Europe." *Socio-Economic Review* 1:215-245.

Swidler, Ann. 1986. "Culture in Action: Symbols and Strategies." *American Sociological Review* 51(2): 273-286.

Tarrow, Sidney. 1998. *Power in Movement: Social movements and contentious politics.* New York: Cambridge University Press.

Teague, Paul. 2006. 'Social Partnership and Local Development in Ireland: The Limits to Deliberation." *British Journal of Industrial Relations* 44(3): 421-443.

Thomas, Hugh. 1962. *The Spanish Civil War.* New York: Penguin.

Thomas, Maria. 2013. "The Faith and the Fury: The construction of Anticlerical Collectives in Spain 1874-1931." *European History Quarterly* 43(1): 73-95.

Toan, Harry. 2011. "TUV comments on Irish-speaking DUP candidate who is 'close personal friend' of top Shinner." In NI Politics: Traditional Unionist Voice website.

Tremlett, Gilles. 2006. *Ghosts of Spain: Travels through a Country's Hidden Past.* New York: Walker & Company.

Ullman, Joan Collelly. 1983. "The Warp and Woof of Parliamentary Politics in Spain, 1808-1939: Anticlericalism versus 'Neo-Catholicism'." *European Studies Review* 13: 145-76.

United Nations Development Programme. 2009. *South-South Migration and Human Development: Reflections on African Experiences*, by Oliver Bakewell, Human Development Research Paper 2009/07. http://hdr.undp.org/en/reports/global/hdr2009/papers/HDRP_2009_07.pdf [accessed 5 July 2013].

Waldinger, Roger and Cynthia Feliciano. 2004. "Will the nre second generation experience 'downward assimilation'? Segmented assimilation re-assessed." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 27(3): 376-402.

Waters, Mary and Tomás Jimenez. 2005. "Assessing Immigrant Assimilation: New Empirical and Theoretical Challenges." *Annual Review of Sociology* 31: 105-25.

Watts, Julie. 2002. *Immigration Policy and the Challenge of Globalization.* Ithaca: ILR Press.

Weber, Max. [1930] 2005. *The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism.* New York: Routledge Classics.

Weeks, Liam and Aodh Quinlivian. 2009. *All Politics is Local: A Guide to Local Elections in Ireland.* Cork: Collins Press.

Whitby, Kenny. 2007. "The Effect of Black Descriptive Representation on Black Electoral Turnout in the 2004 Elections." *Social Science Quarterly* 88(4): 1010-1023.

Woodsworth, Paddy. 2007. *The Basque Country: A Cultural History.* Oxford: Signal Books.

Yilmaz, Ferruh. 2012. "Right-wing hegemony and immigration: How the populist far-right achieved hegemony through the immigration debate in Europe." *Current Sociology* 60(3): 368-381.

Young, Iris Marion. 1989. "Polity and Group Difference: A Critique of the Ideal of Universal Citizenship." *Ethics*, 99(2): 250-274.

Zald, Meyer N. 1996. "Culture, ideology, and strategic framing," In *Comparative Perspectives on Social Movements: Political Opportunities, Mobilizing Structures, and Cultural Findings*, edited by Doug McAdam, John D. McCarthy and Mayer N. Zald, 261-274. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Zapata Barrero, Ricard, and Jonathan Zaragoza Cristiani. 2009. "La gestión del derecho de voto de los inmigrantes en España." *Políticas y gobernabilidad de la inmigración en España.* Ariel.

Zolberg, Aristide R. and Long Litt Woon. 1999. "Why Islam is Like Spanish: Cultural Incorporation in Europe and the United States." *Politics & Society* 27(1):5-38.